

My Vampire 1001

My Vampire System Chapter 1001: The grand master

Hearing the name Brock didn't ring any bells to any of them. No matter how hard they tried they just had never heard the name before. Instead, they were trying to see if they could match his appearance to someone they knew, but again, other than his butler outfit he was wearing they didn't recognize anything else.

Yet, for some reason, Nate was the only one that felt like he knew this person.

'Why is my brain having a big massive fart at a time like this?! I hate when I can't remember things.'

What was worrying Layla, was the reaction Leo and Erin had towards this stranger. Leo was clearly on guard and Erin's eyes wouldn't stop glowing yellow. The only time she had seen Erin like this was when she was about to face a vampire.

"Wait, is he a... a.. vampire!" Layla asked. Now she was understanding why the other two were on guard and how he was able to defeat two Qi users so easily like so.

Leo nodded, giving confirmation. He could tell by his aura and more importantly both Erin and Leo could tell due to his smell. Sniffing the air a few times, Nate too could smell the difference now that Layla had said what had happened.

"It's a little upsetting that you don't remember me." Brock said, looking at Nate. "It's because of me that you're still alive."

Finally, something clicked in Nate's head, he knew why he recognized this person. It wasn't his looks or his outfit, it was his voice. When Nate was on the verge of death, he could hear someone instructing Sam on how to turn him into a vampire.

"So it was you that told Sam what to do?" Nate said, shocked.

The others now, were even more cautious, and gave the signal so Nate could use the shadow to allow them to equip their weapons. It was a skill that was later developed. Depending how far away people were from a shadow user, they could also use shadow equip on their allies.

After the shadow disappeared the weapons were now on display and they were ready for a scuffle.

“Wait guys! Nate you know him, is he friendly?” Layla asked.

“I’m not sure myself, but he did save mine and Dennis’ life back when Hilston attacked us, but other than that I have no clue who he is.”

“Oh, that’s a shame, I thought I might have met one of the others from the Cursed faction here. Honestly, it was a complete coincidence that the two of us were after the same set of people.” Brock tried to explain. “I assure you though, I, or we, are not an enemy, not unless you see us that way. My master is hoping to meet with Quinn, and I’m sure Quinn would like to meet him as well. So it’s in our best interests that the two of us work together.”

What was worrying for Leo at the moment was he couldn’t gauge the person’s strength in front of him. Some of the vampires were able to suppress their auras strength. From his experience the only vampires that could do this were either vampire knights or leaders, and during Leo’s time as a vampire knight he got to know all of them well, but this was a person he did not recognise. What Leo didn’t like doing, was getting into scuffles or messes that he didn’t know much about.

“You said you wish to meet Quinn, and you’re on our side. Then why did you knock out those two before I was able to extract information from them?” Leo asked.

Brock took a step forward, and before his foot had landed on the ground, his whole body disappeared, and soon he was seen walking out from where they had come in, behind them.

“It’s up to you if you want to follow me or not, and I can explain on the way.” Brock said, as he continued to walk.

Leo was sweating, and the others were a little startled as well. The level of skill that was being shown was that of a vampire leader. They knew that if this person wanted to escape, or not be seen he could have well chosen to. Which made them trust the stranger a little.

“Can you tell us, who is your master, that you were talking about before?” Erin asked, as the group followed him.

Brock walked with his hands behind his back with his back straight up and wore a pair of white gloves. He was confident when he walked and he was certain where he was going as well.

“Me and my master have been trying to decide who to team up with to help the humans fend off the great Dalki.” Brock started explaining. If they weren’t sure if he was a vampire before, from the way he called them humans, it was obvious he was one now. “We had already done an evaluation on the military. We knew the group wasn’t strong enough, and at the same time, their system was broken. The way they were handling things, soon they would self-destruct and it seems like we were right when Civil War broke out.

“However, what we never expected was for the human race to recover from the Civil War and be more united than ever before. For what we have found, it’s all due to you guys from the Cursed faction. You were what our calculations never predicted.

“Still, before that, we had originally thought about the idea of teaming up with Pure. They had a much higher chance of defeating the Dalki, they were confident and seemed to never worry about them as a threat, so we tried to find out why.

“They showed us many different things, but it still felt like they were hiding something, and along the way an option to team up with another had come up that wasn’t there before.” Brock said, glancing at those still following behind.

“We wanted to look into Pure a bit more and it turns out they were hiding something. Through my own investigations it led me to this place.”

Before they knew it, in another part of the jungle, the group had reached a large facility that looked almost like a factory. However the strange thing about it all was how quiet the place was, and as soon as the others had arrived they could tell something was up, because they could smell blood.

Walking forward, Brock pushed the double doors open and it was a sight they never expected to see. Human bodies were seen laying on the floor, glass tubes broken and equipment destroyed. However, what stuck out most was there seemed to be beasts that were dead, lying on the floor as well. All of them were the same type.

“As you can see, I have already been making progress and have stopped them from their wrongdoings. It turns out that Pure were running their own little experiments. They were trying to create their own type of beasts. A beast that would listen to them.

“When I arrived, I found that they had strapped many stray members of the Bree family. They had been trying to extract MC cells or use their powers to control the beasts. With cloning technology they wanted to create something that is completely loyal to them.”

“Pure....was doing all this...but how? They couldn't have known about this. My mother would have never let this happen!” Layla shouted, in disbelief.

“When an organisation gets too large, sometimes not everyone knows what is going on behind the scenes.” Brock replied. “Your mother could have very well known nothing about this. Still, we decided that this needed to be stopped. After all, it would be horrible if humans were the ones that created the next Dalki, wouldn't it?”

The group started to look around, as Brock just stood there in place while they did. They were trying to see if they could find anything, any information. The only thing that was found was some more numbers on some of the members' backs, guaranteeing that they were members of Pure.

Even Layla had recognised some of the lower ranking members from when she was at the Pure base. However, other than that, they were unable to find anything at all. No additional information, nor a terminal unbroken.

“You destroyed everything, and took all the information for yourselves.” Nate said. “We can't learn anything, it's like you're blackmailing us.”

“Blackmailing?” Brock replied. “Definitely not. Like I said, I wish for all of us to work together. Go ahead, tell me what exactly you were hoping to find from these people and I will help you.”

The group paused for a second. They were still wondering if all of this was some trick or setup. Even the information they gave there was no way to tell if it was true or not, but Leo, unafraid compared to others, spoke up.

“There are two things we want to know. Where is the Pure base located, and who is the leader of Pure?” Leo asked.

Hearing this, Brock smiled.

“If that is all you are asking, it seems like the Cursed faction isn’t up to date with events as we thought. If that’s all you wanted to know, then I am happy to answer both of them for you.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1002 – Important date

It seemed like a normal day for Sam on the Cursed ship, there were no panicking events going around on the beast planets. No internal disputes he had to solve over where certain things should be placed, or a different department asking for a big budget. It was peaceful.

It was these moments that Sam liked best when everything seemed to be going smoothly all over. Signing off the last thing that needed to be done, Sam sat in his chair which was at the head of the meeting table for the Cursed faction leaders.

The table was on a slightly raised platform with spiraling stairs that would go downward to the control centre of the whole ship, the good thing about Sam’s seat was he could swirl around and see outside the glass while also looking below at all those working hard away.

“I guess I should just double check there is nothing important, or maybe something in the future that needs to be done so I can free my work up later.” Sam said to himself.

Without a doubt in anyone's mind, Sam was a workaholic. Even though there was nothing to do, he still felt like there were things needing to be done. When opening up the calendar, Sam looked at the current date. It was July 23rd, yet for some reason it was marked red.

'Did I do this, I wouldn't have marked it for no reason?' When sweeping through the date though, there were no notes like he would have usually done for other dates.

He tried thinking what the event could be, but he could think of nothing, nor why the date was important. If it was such a big deal, surely someone else would have contacted him about it. Closing the calendar, Sam looked out the window once again.

"Argh! This is going to drive me crazy. If I don't find out why that blasted date was written down!" Sam thought in anger. He gave a call to those in the Cursed faction that were currently on the ship.

Going through each one of them though, none of them seemed to know anything, until eventually, he had decided to contact Logan. Logan was often busy so Sam didn't like to call him, but it was bugging him even more that no one knew why he had marked this date down, and he was sure he hadn't done so by accident.

"Sorry, I don't know why either. Although I can try to cross reference some systems to see if there is anything going on." Logan asked.

It seemed to be a lost cause but Sam asked him to do it anyway. If Logan couldn't find anything then he would just have to give up and assume that either someone else had tampered with his calendar or he had mistakenly done something.

However, it didn't take long for Logan to call Sam back.

"I believe I have found the reason why that date is so important. When cross referencing those things I looked for all events on our field to do with that date. I then matched it to events related to those in the Cursed, and sorted them by--"

"Err Logan, I know you work really hard, but do you mind?" Sam interpreted.

“Oh sure, it’s Quinn’s birthday today.” Logan said, and quickly hung up the call.

Now Sam realised why he had marked the date down. It was a rare occasion anyone got to celebrate their birthday, but for Quinn, last time he had been so busy that it went past with no one noticing. Because of that, Sam wanted to plan a big event for him, but got interrupted before he could organise anything and write down any notes.

Immediately, Sam got to work. Quinn was still at the school teaching, although it was the weekend so he shouldn’t have been too busy, but for what he wanted to do, they needed to get someone on the inside to distract him. At first Sam was about to contact Peter, but instead he decided to contact someone else.

— —

“So you want me to distract Quinn for half the day or at least for a few hours because it’s the boy’s birthday.” Helen replied.

“Yes, and make sure he doesn’t find out about it either, can you do it?” Sam asked.

“I have the perfect thing in mind.” She replied.

“You seem to be quite the hard worker no matter what you do.” Helen commented. “You know, you don’t have to do that, you could ask one of your assistants to do that for you.”

Quinn didn’t look up at who it was but could tell from their voice, it was Helen.

“It’s okay, I enjoy doing this. When I’m here, being a teacher, it makes me forget about everything for a second.” Quinn said, placing the tablet down and looking at Helen with a smile.

“Be careful there! Give any girl a smile like that, with the light shining on you in the background, and they are going to eat you up.” Said Helen.

“Eat me up?” Quinn replied. “So what did you want exactly, other than food.” Quinn misunderstood.

“You owe me a date, and I think it’s the perfect day for a date, don’t you think? Birthday boy!”

“How do you know?” Quinn replied, surprised.

“I should know everything about my future husband, right?”

Right now, he was riding the levitating tube that was taking them out of the school and into the main city area. A place for the military family to relax, play and enjoy life. A modern city for fun and entertainment, with games, movies and more.

‘Well, I did say I would, but I just never thought she would be so aggressive.’

While on the train, Quinn stood up, as the train was busy on the weekend. He was trying to be a gentleman and let Helen sit, but instead, she stood up as well and pushed her body towards him.

She was a few inches away from his face, and now he was able to get a closer look at her. Her long straight legs, her plump plum-like bum, and her current pink hair that went with her red lipstick she was wearing.

Her hair colour would often change but Quinn quite liked it pink, it made Helen look a little dangerous.

‘Into the dangerous type, huh? Don’t you get into enough trouble? I can hear your heartbeat inside here.’ Vincent teased.

They had finally reached their stop and Quinn quickly got off from the train. He didn’t know what would happen if he continued to stare at her longer.

'Is it like a reverse charm effect or something?' Quinn thought.

'You're a teenager who has just turned eighteen. These feelings are normal.' Vincent argued.

"Were you not hungry? You hardly ate anything." Helen noticed.

In fact, Quinn was starving, but not for what she thought. Luckily the restaurant had some meat that he ordered quite rare, allowing him to be satisfied for the time being .

"It's okay, I just prefer my own home cooking." Quinn replied. "I was wondering, Helen. You're a good looking girl, strong and was the leader of a strong faction. You could have anyone you wanted. Why do you like a boy like me?" Quinn asked.

Helen placed her spoon down that she was digging into her ice cream with, and looked at Quinn like it was a stupid question to ask.

"Quinn, do you not know who you are? As you said, I should have high standards right, because I can get anyone. You are the leader of the Cursed faction and one of the world leaders. But it's not just because of that. You're different from the ones that have your power, Quinn. A lot of people make promises, but when they reach the top they fail to deliver them, or give up when it gets too hard, but not you Quinn. That's what attracts me to you." She said taking a big scoop of ice cream.

"But I'm only eighteen? Isn't it strange?"

"And I'm twenty-four. What does it matter? You look like you're in your mid twenties, and you certainly don't act your age at times Quinn." Said Helen.

"You're only twenty-four? I thought...I thought you were..."

"Older? A lot of people do, because of the position I was in. I didn't start the Daisy faction. My sisters are older than me, but later on my talent was discovered and my sisters who always looked after me. They put me in the position and gave me the place."

“So do you like me now then?” Helen asked.

Quinn thought about it, but there were a few things hitting his mind at the moment. There were others appearing in his head and on top of that Helen was human. Could a real relationship work between a vampire and a human, and if Quinn told her now, what he really was, would she run away?

At that moment, a message was received on Helen’s communicator. It was time.

“Alright, you don’t have to answer me now. Let’s head back.”

— —

On the journey back, Quinn didn’t speak much, as he had a lot on his mind again. But he had enjoyed the day out, and it was a lot better than his last birthdays. All the previous ones he had before that, there was no one around him.

When they reached the school, Helen said that one of the teachers had asked him for something, and to meet him in the beast class teaching room.

As they were approaching the building, Quinn could hear several heartbeats inside, and the light scurrying sound of several feet as it quietly ran across the floor. He was wondering why he would be called at such a time, and why there would be so many people in the room.

Walking up to it, the doors slid open and several bangs and pops were heard all at once. Balloons flew in the air and there was a giant “Surprise!”, everyone shouted at the same time.

Not for a second, even after hearing the heartbeats, did Quinn expect a surprise birthday party. He just thought that no one would care, and to see how much effort had gone into such a thing...

“Thank you so much, everyone. This is the best birthday I have ever had.” Quinn said.

During the party, as Quinn mingled with everyone, Sam noticed that he had received a message from Nate, stating that they were on their way back and they should arrive in a few days,

My Vampire System Chapter 1003 – Sil's anger

It was another regular school day. Although another and regular were rarely put together. With everything happening so far, a regular day seemed strange for Quinn and the gang. He had a great birthday party which he would remember for the rest of his life, but soon everyone else had left to do their regular duties.

'I guess it's a good thing that they can work so well without me.' Quinn thought as he reminisced about yesterday.

In the homeroom class, he noticed that the students were full of life and excited unlike before, and none of them seemed to be covered in bruises and marks. What happened to Erlen had gotten around and seeing Swin and Shiro put on a great display of skills, made the others no longer view their class as weak.

Although it wouldn't completely get rid of the problem, all of Quinn's actions so far had certainly helped. Still, there was one thing he was debating about and that was teaching the students Qi.

'Is it really a good idea to teach everyone it, just like abilities there are some that are talented in Qi and others that are not, it might just cause another problem.' Quinn thought.

'You have to remember there will always be others that are better at certain things. Some kids are better at writing, while others are better at maths. This might be something that you just can't stop. And remember, Pure might be teaching all their members soon, the military at the moment is weak.' Vincent explained.

'Yeah, but you can't kill someone with maths...I think. My point is if I teach these kids Qi and it gets out of hand it will be all my fault.'

It was a tough one for Quinn to figure out, he agreed with both Oscar and Vincent's reasonings. Everyone seemed to think it was a good idea to teach others Qi, at least for their own sake.

'Maybe I should wait to counsel Leo when he's back, it still doesn't feel right for me to just teach others without asking him first.' Quinn thought.

In the school the students were currently having their lunch break, Sil with his new disguise looking like Chucky, didn't stand out anymore. As expected it was as if he was an invisible person.

This was good for two reasons, the first, no one would attack them. Before when others learnt of Sil's ability or thought he was a weak boy, people would try to take advantage of that, but they couldn't even remember Sil was in their class now.

The second reason, being invisible allowed them to attempt to copy as many abilities as possible, but the ability that was needed or one they thought would help was just never found.

'This kid, he's usually in a mood but today...' Chucky thought.

"Hey, I don't know much about what we are trying to do, but we will find the ability you are looking for eventually. We have Logan, who has access to all the databases. So any new abilities that are recorded he will be able to find out, and Quinn is one of the World leaders now so getting information will be easy."

Hearing this, Sil just nodded and continued to shove a small piece of bread into his mouth. Chucky's attempt at cheering him up had failed.

A few seconds later, Shiro, Venus and Swin were seen taking the seat next to them. Ever since Sil and Chucky had saved them, they had been thankful and if they saw Chucky on his own. They would come over to sit with him, even though they didn't know who the other person with him was.

The three boys were excited as they seemed to have earned new fame. Passing students in the hallway would talk about them all the time which was a first for all of them. After excitedly talking and boasting, they noticed the boy's depressed mood.

“Hey, is your brother okay?” Venus asked.

“My brother?” Chucky replied back, and he noticed they were talking about Sil, since his appearance was now similar to his. “Oh yeah, he’s just upset about not getting something.”

Shiro would guess based on the fact that this boy had the same demeanour as Sil, and was hanging around with Chucky, that this was Sil. He wanted to do something to cheer him up, after all, the words Sil said that day had really hit him.

‘I wonder what type of life Sil lived to think like that?’ Shiro thought. When Sil looked back at him, he turned around to avoid eye contact and knocked his carton of juice on the floor. Going down to pick it up, something had gone past all the, at the table and due to Shiro ducking at a particular time the object had whacked Sil right in the face.

“What the hell happened, did someone just throw something at us?!” Venus said, looking at where the object was thrown from.

“Shiro, let’s fight again right now!” A boy shouted, from across the canteen hall. “I’m sick and tired of everyone saying I lost to you when I won. Come on, if you’re so strong we can fight right now!” Zhen shouted.

With how students were talking about Shiro and the others, whenever they saw Zhen it was the same, but they didn’t speak positively about him and instead thought he had received a fake win. In fact, Zhen was getting paranoid over this himself. While walking around he thought he could hear everyone talking about him, lips moving into the words winner and loser, and he thought they were being directed at him.

‘Haha, I didn’t even lose a fight and everyone is talking about me like this! Well fine, I know exactly what to do!’ Zhen thought, as he carried around with him, one of the practise beast balls for activating one’s ability. A large round black heavy ball. A few seconds ago, he had hurled it towards Shiro as he could see him smiling happy and smug.

Zhen had good aim, but what happened was unfortunate as Shiro had ducked down from dropping his juice box on the floor, and instead the ball had hit another. It had hit Sil who had been lost in his own world.

“Are you okay?” Shiro asked, as Sil was standing up and blood was falling to the floor, dripping from either his mouth or nose but it was hard to tell since Sil was looking at the floor. What was strange though, was Shiro could see pieces of dirt falling to the floor as well.

“Come on Shiro, fight me here and now!” Zhen continued to shout.

Those next to him tried to calm Zhen down, while Shiro was more concerned for Sil at this moment, but when he lifted his head, he took a step back slightly. For Sil’s face was disfigured, half of it seemed to be falling off, cracked from the top right and around the mouth area, where it was bleeding quite severely as a couple of his teeth were broken or made loose.

‘Is it some type of mask?’ Shiro figured it out.

Sil, immediately picked up the black ball from the ground, then placed his hand on Chucky, Sil and lastly Venus as well. He walked forward and his mask started to crumble away as it would no longer work and a bloody faced Sil could now be seen.

“What the hell, are you his pet boyfriend or something, get lost? I don’t want you!” Zhen shouted.

Everyone around was taking a glance at Sil and that’s when some people started to recognize him. “Hey isn’t that the guy who managed to beat the Graylash head general in the elemental class?”

“Yeah he went missing and no one could find him.”

“I think I just saw his face change.”

Zhen could no longer take it and started to charge forward, but the second he did, the black ball came hurling towards him at an incredible speed and it had huge weight behind it. As it hit Zhen’s chest it cracked his bones inside, and pushed him back through the air. The ball continued to move, pushing him

more, his body hitting other students as he was thrown through the air, until eventually he was slammed into the wall and the black ball fell to the ground.

However, it wasn't over yet, as Sil walked forward and used his telekinesis ability to pull Zhen from out of the wall, and bring him towards him, hovering in the air.

"People like you never learn, and now you have broken my mask!" Sil shouted. Soon Sil was pulling at each of Zhen's limbs, as if an invisible force was stretching him. Zhen started to scream in pain, and no one wished to get close.

"Sil, you'll kill him stop!" Shiro shouted.

"He had a chance, and now he is running more than one person's life. If he continues to live he will just ruin more!" Sil shouted.

The teachers who were in the canteen were soon on the move. Seeing the students fighting they were attempting to jump in and stop it, but they just found themselves being hit away by several lashes of water that would appear out of nowhere.

Now all of the students were staying well clear of Sil and Zhen, and soon a big pop was heard as Zhen's shoulder had been pulled out from his socket.

'Damn, if Sil is like this, then no one can stop him.' Chucky thought.

"Quinn, answer me, come to the canteen straight away, something has happened with Sil, he's out of control!"

My Vampire System Chapter 1004 – Spoiled Brat

A desperate call was made to Quinn, but Chucky was unsure if it had gone through or not. He was too panicked and just shouted a message down his receiver, hoping it would go through and Quinn would

know what to do because if someone didn't step in to stop what was happening, there would be a dead student on the canteen floor.

If this was to happen, Chucky truthfully didn't know how the Cursed faction would recover from such a thing.

He knew that Quinn was making great efforts to convince others that the Cursed faction was the right place to be, but once this got out, that the Cursed had sent their own men in the school under disguise and ended up killing a student. No one would want to join a group like that.

Grabbing the black balls around his belt, Chucky threw them, aiming for Sil's legs.

'I'm sorry, Sil! But my job is to protect you, and this might hurt a little!'

However, as the black balls got close, they were stopped mid-air, and with the hand that was free, he slowly made the balls come towards the palm of his hands and held them in place. While the others continued to hold up Zhen.

Once again, another pop was heard as Zhen's other arm had been dislocated.

"He can do that with one hand. Just how strong is Sil?" Swin thought, now he was starting to think that the rumours of when Sil had defeated the head general weren't exaggerated at all. With this level of strength, he could tell Sil was immensely strong. No one currently in the room could stop him.

The reason Sil's telekinesis was strong was because not only had he gathered the powers of those close to him, but in the morning, still sticking to his task, he had touched other students as well, attempting to find their ability, so Sil abilities were amped up to the maximum.

"Did you forget I have your ability as well?" Sil said, holding the back balls.

"You're not going to hit me, are you!?" Chucky shouted. "We're on the same side."

“Really, didn’t you just attempt to hit me?” Sil replied.

After hearing this response, Chuky knew he was in for a load of hurt. Something had snapped to Sil, and he was beyond reasoning. The balls had left his hands, and the speed accelerated, hitting him in both of his t.h.i.g.hs, crushing the bones underneath his muscles and causing him to fall to the floor.

All thought of Venus and Swin intervening and trying to stop Sil had gone out the window, but not Shiro.

“Sil, what are you doing! Didn’t you tell me not to kill someone before? How I would regret it for the rest of my life. You would too, wouldn’t you!?” Shiro shouted out and pleaded.

“You’re right, because look at what’s happened to me,” Sil said in a voice that sounded like it was in pure pain. Shiro didn’t know how heavy Sil’s words were.

“Where the hell are you, Quinn!’ Chucky shouted.

At that moment, the doors opened wide, and someone could be seen running through all the students.

“I’m not Quinn, but I’m just as good!” Peter shouted as he jumped up in the air and entered the open area where the two were fighting, but he stood there still for a couple of seconds as he was confused.

“Wait, what?!” Peter thought.

‘Did he not get my message? I thought Quinn had sent him, I guess it was something else, and he doesn’t know what’s happening.’ Chucky thought.

“Sil, stop Sil, he’s gone crazy!” Chucky shouted.

The reason why Peter had arrived in the canteen was due to his soul weapon returning to him. Peter could only create one mud mask at a time with his soul weapon, and when it was destroyed, Peter knew something was up.

Based on the current time, he realised that all the students would be in the canteen. However, he thought Sil would be the one that was hurt and not the other way round, hence his confusion. Seeing Chucky on the floor hurt, and everyone spread out everywhere, he was trying to figure out what happened.

“Sil, put the stupid student down, I know they’re annoying, but this is too far!” Peter demanded.

“Isn’t this our goal? Isn’t this what we should be doing? Getting rid of these people that make the world worse. This is the easiest way. People like him made Vorden and Quinn’s life harder at school. I’m helping everyone even if they don’t realise it.” Til said.

Hearing these words, a vein started to stick out from Peter’s head, one of his hands opened wide, straightening his fingers, and he began to walk forward.

Seeing this, Sil attempted to use his telekinesis power to slow down Peter, and it worked, but Peter pushed through with his strength.

“Sil, let me go and give you the slap that you deserve, you spoiled brat!” Peter shouted, stepping through the force. It felt like he had an elephant that weighed several tons on his back, and it was attempting to drag him back, gritting his teeth, he continued to move forward. “You think people can’t change, especially kids? What about me!

“You must have known what I did to Quinn back then. According to you, I deserved to die as well! And I might agree with you, but I try everyday to make up for what I have done!” Peter shouted, moving forward again.

Now, Sil had no choice but to drop Zhen to the floor and use both hands to stop Peter back, who was now around two meters apart from him.

“General Peter is strong.” Swin thought, knowing how much power Sil had to be using right now, and Peter was walking through even that.

‘Sil, I know you’re upset, I know you want Vorden back, I know you’re angry, but don’t take it out on these students. Take it out on me! You think you’re the only one that doesn’t miss Vorden! He and

Quinn were the only friends I had during school. I would do anything I could to bring him back right here, but I can't!

"You doing any of this crap is helping no one and is only bringing more trouble to the people that are still here!" Peter said, finally raising his hand above his head, and moving it slowly down. Sil stood there still using his ability as Peter's hand touched Sil's face.

It was hardly a slap, as there was no speed giving no power into it, but it was the only thing Peter could do as his fingers brushed his cheek.

"Sil, stop it now!" Quinn said, having rushed in.

Everyone seeing General Hardy now arrive were relieved, but after hearing the rumours and witnessing Sil's power, they were all still afraid.

Quinn looked at Peter, who was still, and the student on the floor. He couldn't imagine what happened, but when he looked at Sil now, his face was full of tears.

'Did Sil do all of this? Did I make a mistake thinking that he was ready to be with other kids? I thought that bringing him to school would make him better, but it might have made him worse. I shouldn't have forced him into a situation he didn't want to be in. Part of this is my fault.'

"I'm sorry, Quinn, I don't know why..." Sil managed to blurt out and finally dropped his hands.

In dropping his hands, the powers that were being used on Peter were finally free, and Peter could move again.

Everyone seeing Sil cry in place was wondering just what was going on. Was it all over? Or was he soon going to attempt to blast everyone in the room? No one dared make a move in a situation like this. It was just common sense.

Lifting his hand up again, Peter swung with a strong force and slapped Sil across the face, sending his body spinning a couple of times before he eventually fell to the floor and had passed out.

“I told you I would give you a slap!” Peter said. “The crisis has been stopped.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1005 – Young master

It was a daring act, to say the least from Peter. The students thought that what he had done was reckless, and at the same time, they were touched. For Peter had risked his life getting in the middle of a crazy student to save all of theirs.

A round of applause had started as the students thanked him for saving their lives. However, there was one little slip up that had occurred.

“That was the one that defeated the head General, right? Well, I kind of believe those rumours now. He could have killed everyone. Was he really going to pull Zhen’s limbs off?”

“Thankfully, General Peter was here. The Cursed faction really has some strong people.”

“Speaking off, did you hear what Sil said at the end? He was saying sorry to Quinn?”

“Quinn...Quinn Dulfus? Wait, you don’t think he was saying sorry to the Cursed faction leader, Quinn Talen, did you, and he was looking at...”

A few of the students had caught on to what Sil had said at the end. Many people were named Quinn, but the one person he was looking at when he said these words was General Hardy, when he had entered the room.

‘It looks like my luck is up. What else can I do now?’ Quinn thought.

However, before he had revealed himself to all the students, another person had a brilliant idea.

“Did this student say, Quinn!” Peter said out loud in a booming voice so everyone could hear clearly. He even stood facing the crowd as if it was a theatre performance. “Could he mean the ‘Cursed leader’ Quinn Talen, but that’s my faction leader.” Placing his hand on top of his head, Peter started to look through the crowd and looked past everyone.

“I don’t see my faction leader anywhere. The boy must have gone mad!” Peter said.

Seeing what he was trying to do, another student decided to help out. Shiro walked up to Sil and started to kneel by his side.

‘Here it goes.’

“Oh Sil, you always wanted to impress Quinn from the Cursed faction. I guess you felt guilty that he might find out about what you did. Now you will never be able to join them!” Shiro said.

They didn’t have much time to think about it either. It didn’t take long for Hayley, and a few other teachers to enter the room, and they were starting to deal with the problem. Healing the injured students and getting a report of what exactly happened.

‘Well, let’s hope that works. I might be out of trouble. But I can’t say the same for Sil.’ Quinn thought.

—

A lot of students were at the canteen when the events had happened, so it was impossible to hide, and everyone had already learnt of what happened. They were two key factors that were being passed around.

Sil really was as strong as the past rumours said and was a frightening uncontrolled, unstable student. Peter was a fearless god in their eyes. The said general who went up against that exact person.

The good news coming from this, was the Cursed faction’s reputation had increased once again with people looking up to Peter, deciding that they wanted to join and follow someone like him.

The bad news, as expected, Quinn was called into a meeting with Oscar. The two of them were in the office, and they were sitting opposite each other at a desk. For some reason, Quinn felt quite embarrassed. Last time, Quinn had said some words to Oscar, and now he was in here because of one of his problems.

Oscar had just finished giving Quinn a detailed report of everything that happened. The injuries caused to the members of staff, students hit that were in the crossfire and even Chucky's injuries.

"Quinn, I believe I am quite the reasonable person, despite what you may think," Oscar said. "I understand, after what I had seen those Blade's did, I know how hard it must be to control someone like that, but when you asked him to be a student of ours, I thought you would have at least had him under control.

"Now, if you insist on him staying, I will have to -"

"It's okay, Sil will leave," Quinn said, as he was already prepared for all of this. "Honestly, there is no other choice. I already tried to cover up his tracks once. If you're going to ask me to make sure this won't happen again, I can't say I can, unless he is by my side twenty-four seven, and if that's the case, then there is no point in him being here." Quinn said.

"That's good to hear, and it makes it easier on us," Oscar replied. "Honestly, Innu was already blaming all of this on you. When they found out that this involved Shiro and Sil from your class and you had tried to hide him, he thought you had planned this.

"Thankfully, since Zhen is actually under head General Sach, he decided to not get any more involved in this matter. This answer should satisfy Innu." Oscar claimed.

Back in the classroom, it was the end of the school day, and Quinn was standing while Sil was sitting alone on a single desk amongst many others that were all empty.

"Are you going to tell me what happened then, or is it going to be a silent match between the two of us?" Quinn asked.

Finally breaking the silence between the two of them.

“It’s been building up,” Sil said. “I keep hearing things, things I don’t like, things that Vorden hated in the past. Things that Raten would have dealt with if they went too far. When I got hit today, I just thought...my mind went black...I was asking for answers, but I never got a reply.”

“You mean you were asking for answers from them, inside your head? Are you talking about Vorden and Raten?” Quinn asked.

“When I didn’t get a reply, and there were no answers, I didn’t know what to do. I wanted someone to just tell me what was right and wrong. I thought if I just kept doing something, anything, they would come back.”

It appeared that Quinn had made a mistake. It was too soon for Sil. There hadn’t been enough time, time spent where Sil was alone in his mind.

“I think you know that you can’t stay here any longer, but I don’t want you to think that your time was wasted here. Before you go, there are some people that want to say goodbye.” Quinn said it was the signal for the door to open, and three students were seen walking in, Swin, Venus and Shiro.

“We heard that you won’t be at the school anymore,” Shiro said.

“Yeah, Hardy said that the Cursed faction has agreed to take you in and there going to teach you personally. If you ask me, that’s a lot cooler than staying here. You’re getting a head start!” Swin said excitedly. Venus hit him with his elbow, as this wasn’t meant to be something exciting.

“Sil, thank you,” Venus said. “Just don’t beat yourself up over this too much. If I had your power, there were times where I would have probably done the same thing to people who were picking on us, or worse. I think we’ve all had those thoughts.”

“We also want to say it won’t be goodbye,” Shiro added. “If you’re going to be in the Cursed faction, then we will see each other soon because when we finish school, we want to join the Cursed faction as well.”

Sil didn't say anything, but he did smile, which warmed Quinn's heart a little.

With the goodbyes said, it was time for Sil's journey at school to end, but Quinn would still remain for the time being. Escorting him back to the Cursed ship was Chucky as they flew through space.

"You know, going back to school was kinda nice," Chucky said while flying the ship. "It was different compared to last time, and it also reminded me of all the stupid things I used to do at school."

Of course, as usual Sil said nothing, so Chucky was just left to talk to himself, but when they had finally landed and docked into the Cursed ship, Sil said something that caught his ear.

"Thanks for helping me while I was at school," Sil said, walking forward.

Just ahead, not too far from where they were, they could see that another ship had docked not too long ago. In fact, the people still hadn't left the landing bay, as for who was there, it was Leo, Erin, Nate and Layla.

"Oh, hey guys," Layla said with a smile. "What are you guys doing here?"

"It's a long story," Chucky replied and then noticed someone he didn't recognise. "Who's he?"

Turning around, in his butler suit, his eyes fell upon Sil.

"Now, this is a surprise to meet you here, isn't it, young master?" Brock said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1006: Who is the strongest?

When the others had heard what Brock had said, they were confused for a second. Throughout their whole journey, Brock had been avoiding a certain question. Whenever speaking, Brock would constantly talk about his master, and now when he saw Sil, he was referring to him as little master?

They were wondering what exactly Sil had to do in all of this. Looking at him for some answers. Sil had already left back several feet and had both his hands out in an attacking position. He was constantly darting his eyes around the room.

Sil recognised him instantly, from when he was younger to his times when Vorden was in control of his body. This man had worked at the Balde mansion and wasn't just anyone, but was the head butler there as well.

One of the strongest members outside of the main family, but this wasn't Sil's concern. If Brock was here, he feared that perhaps Hilston was here as well.

"Worry not, young master," Brock said with a smile. "Hilston and the others are not here. In fact, although I am the Brock you know, I am not the same Brock that they knew."

Tapping his face, in almost a second, Brock's appearance had changed, and now instead of the dirty blonde hair colour he had before, it was greyed out, and a scar had formed over his right eye. His neat look from before was gone as his tangly black hair was flowing from both sides.

"I can see you are shocked, but there is too much to explain, and I would hate to have to explain myself twice. Besides, before that, didn't you lovely ladies say you would give me a tour?" Brock asked as he bowed down to Layla and Erin.

Even they couldn't get used to his sudden change. The ability that was just used had to be something similar to Peter's transformation ability.

"Come on, let's get to it!" Brock said. He was tired of standing around and was now ignoring Sil. "Remember, we still haven't decided what to do yet. This is your chance to impress my master and me."

The others all awkwardly looked at each other, and Sil had eased up a bit, but before doing anything, they thought they should call for one person first, Sam. He had been given a few details about this man, that he was a vampire, and Sam was told everything that Leo and the others knew about him.

It was only because of his okay that they let him on this ship. When Sam finally arrived, he looked at Brock.

'If I'm right, then this man is related to him.' Sam thought as he gave a smile and started the tour around the place.

It might not have been the wisest choice to show an enemy the base of the Cursed faction along with all their powers and supplies. Still, Sam knew that this man was alone, and even if he was strong, he wouldn't be able to take them all out.

Besides, that wasn't their goal anyway. If they truly wanted to team up with them and wanted to defeat the Dalki, then they would want to keep them alive as long as possible.

The tour seemed to be going well, or at least Sam thought it was as Brock didn't say anything and just nodded. Sil, although he wasn't meant to come along initially, had decided to tag along at the back.

He was still worried that something might happen, and if so, he would be there to stop it. However, things went a little strange when they entered a particular room.

Sam thought this was a must on the list if one was to impress someone because people were consistently impressed by his skills. They had entered Logan's research room.

The sound of clanking and tinkering was heard as they entered the room. As usual, Logan wouldn't look at them until he had at least finished what he was currently working on.

While they were waiting for him, they looked around the room, and that's when Brock noticed a few things, such as a teleporter designed after the vampire ones. As well as a particular device.

"So this is the device that might cause us a heap of trouble," Brock said, looking at it.

Although Logan wasn't finished working on whatever he was working on, hearing the voice, he had stopped in the middle of doing something for the first time. A first for everyone. He lifted up his goggles and dropped the tool in his hand.

"Oh, false alarm," Logan said, getting back to work.

"I guess we have both changed a bit since you last saw me," Brock said and tapped his face again to change it back to his butler appearance from before.

After having just picked up the tool, Logan had dropped it again.

"Brock, Brock from Balde island, is Eno with you!" Was Logan's first words.

Sam and the others didn't quite understand why Logan had said this, but it looked like Sam's guess was partially correct. Brock did have something to do with Eno.

"Wait, is the master he keeps referring to is Eno, this Richard Eno that Quinn has been looking for, for so long!?" Layla figured it out.

Back when Logan was on the Blade island, he had been set free by Brock and even told where to go to escape the island. He didn't understand then, but he did know that Brock was trying to keep him going. He told him to search for Richard Eno.

In fact, with Brock being his only lead, Logan was thinking about going back to the Blade island to find him, but he never thought that he would see him on the ship.

"I guess now you all have too many questions to ask that we can't continue our wonderful tour," Brock said. "Very well, you guys have been patient enough. Let's have a little chat, shall we?"

Inside the command centre, for the time being, the place was cleared. All those that would usually be sitting away at their terminals had been asked to take a break. This ship could mostly run on autopilot anyway, and Logan was there if anything serious happened.

Not everyone in the Cursed leaders had been called, only those that were present at the time. Sam still didn't know what information should and shouldn't have been shared. So currently present was Nate, Leo, Erin, Layla and from the other group, Sil, Sam and Logan.

"I know you have a lot of questions, and I know a lot of you are interested in who I ...Who we are, so I would say please hold any additional questions you have until I have at least told my whole reasoning for being here, and again Sil, as I told you before you can relax. I assure you I am not part of the Blade family. In the first place, I am a vampire and always have been.

"However, my relationship with the Blade family is genuine, and I know everything about you, Vorden, Raten and all of the other kids at the temple."

The piece that they finally needed was here. Logan wanted to know the truth, the truth of why his parents trusted Richard Eno, and what they have exactly been doing this whole time.

"First, I think it's only right of me to answer the questions you have about Pure first. As stated before me, and my master work together, and you are correct. He is Richard Eno. We were deciding who we should put all of our resources into helping out.

"After all, the humans strongest forces were divided, and while they should have been fighting together against the Dalki, they were split. So Eno had no choice but to stay out of the limelight for a while, figuring things out as they went along.

"Also, there are far more moving parts than everyone here at the table probably realises. One change could affect a whole leap of change going on. Now about Pure, unfortunately, their base is located on a giant submarine, and their location is always on the move deep in earth's waters.

"However, now that I have provided you with this information, then I'm sure you can figure out a way to track them. At least Logan can. If he could finish creating that Demon beast locator, he can create something that would be able to find a device as large as a submarine.

"As for the other question you had, I'm sorry about this, although we do know the answer, I do not. That will have to be a question for Richard Eno, as he is the only one that has personally met him.

"I only follow what he says, so I only know so much."

Clenching his hand, Leo was a bit annoyed by his answer. He was expecting to find the person but now was told to wait even longer. However, after taking a deep breath, he realised being impatient would change nothing. He had waited so long, and finding out if his suspicions were correct or not, wasn't a big deal. He would continue doing what he had been doing, assuming it was that person.

"Now, what I'm about to tell you all next is very important, so listen up. This is about the Dalki, the vampires and the humans. If I was to ask you the question of who the strongest human in existence is, what would your answers be?" Brock asked. "Don't worry, you can speak."

"Oscar, the supreme commander," Erin said.

"Owen Graylash," Nate answered.

"Quinn?" Layla shyly answered.

"Quinn is no longer human," Leo answered. "For this question, I would have to have faced every human in existence to know it."

"No, you are all forgetting someone, someone that we don't even need to fight to know that they are the strongest human. Hilston Blade of the Blade family." Sam said.

"Correct, Hilston Balde, The blade family," Brock said, looking at Sil. "They play one of the biggest roles in all of this, and they don't even know it."

My Vampire System Chapter 1007: Protect the Blade family?

After meeting Brock and finding out who he is, or who he was as well, Sam had his suspicions that the Blade family would be involved in all of this somehow. Due to Brock working at the Balde family. The

fact that he was using some sort of disguise and how long he had to have been there for it just made sense.

Richard Eno, just didn't seem like the type of person to do things on the whim. Everything he did, everything that happened was done with caution. In a way, it reminded Sam a little of himself, but the difference was, while Sam was playing chess with one opponent, it felt like Richard Eno was playing with four at the same time, and each one of the moves he made was intertwined with the others.

"We as a group over the years have worked very hard to make sure that we have eyes everywhere." Brock continued to explain. "We have eyes in the Human world. We know everything that happened, from the start of the Civil war to before most of you here were born. We have kept eyes in the vampire world. We know what happened with Quinn, and Fex. However, we are unable to get involved so much there.

"Last, we even have eyes in the Dalki world as well, which is why we have decided that we can't just sit back and watch to see how this plays out, we have to act now. Some things that Eno had predicted didn't come true, and at the same time, unpredicted things have happened."

Sam being the type of person he was, so badly wanted to interrupt Brock at this moment. For each thing he was telling them there were hundreds of questions he wanted to ask, even things about the past before he was born.

However, he wouldn't do so, and he had a feeling Brock had already been told what he could and couldn't tell the others.

"For now, I will tell you what you need to know." Brock said. "From the beginning the Blades were an exciting group of people. From generation to generation they had the goal that was passed down of becoming the greatest human ever alive, and even before abilities, they had somewhat achieved that goal with their super being bodies.

"They would even give vampires a run for their money. However, our interest in them grew, not when they had discovered their ability, but when they had discovered a giant stone tablet. "

Hearing this, Logan and Sil knew exactly what they were talking about. Anyone who had been to the Blade island would. For the giant tablet could be seen when approaching the island, and Sil had grown up on the island itself.

“That tablet was special, I thought it was just a giant rock?” Sil interrupted.

Brock didn't give him a telling off, but instead smiled at Sil. It seemed like Sil probably was the only person who would be able to interrupt Brock without him making a fuss over it.

“That rock is more special than any of you know, but again, the details about that will not benefit you in any way.” Brock said. “What is important is that the Blades decided to set their base of operation around the giant tablet. Building a castle and a place to call home. Due to them finding the tablet, Eno had kept their eye on them, on top of that they were extraordinary humans that seemed to keep getting better by the second.

“At the time, the tablet was important to Eno's research and what he wanted to do was keep an eye on it. So he asked me to personally infiltrate the Blade family. With my abilities it was an easy task to do. I could change who I was at any point. My main goal was to keep the Blade family a secret so no one would find out about the giant stone.

“I believe I did my task quite well, silencing anything about them and as generations passed it became a practice within their own family to keep it a secret. Even though they didn't know who or why someone was doing it before.

“However, this didn't become an important factor until a later time.” Brock turned to Logan. “Logan, if you have discovered the base then I believe you already know the answer to how the Dalki were created. From a great demon tier beast that was shaped like a dragon. I don't know if you know the details. Still, the demon tier dragon originally had two heads, and it had a special ability, allowing it to split its body into two.

“The vampires had only managed to capture half a demon tier beast, and that is why the Dalki are incomplete.”

Logan knew most of these details already thanks to the logs his family had left him. It seemed he was correct and the reason the Dalki were attacking earth was due to the search of the other half of the demon tier beast.

“The Dalki have been searching for the other half of the demon tier beast, that is why they haven’t given up on attacking, and they never will until they run out of their lifespan. That other half of the dragon one day had actually arrived on earth, and the people who had dealt with it were the Blade family. Before anyone could even attempt to see it. But they didn’t defeat it, instead, it’s under their control and is still at the Blade island.”

“Wait!” Logan interrupted. “We were on the Blade island, but me, Peter, Quinn and Sil, we never saw the Dragon!”

“The dragon was there.” Sil said. “It has always been there, they keep it by the giant tablet.”

Now Sil understood what Brock meant. The Balde family just saw the Dragon as a pet. They had no idea that the Dalki were after it.

“One half of the dragon is in the vampire world, one half in the Human world. The Dalki already have found out about the one in the vampire world, however they still do not know the location of the one in the Human world.” Brock said. “The Blade island was meant to be kept a secret to all except a small few.

“But then someone had gone searching for the Blades. Someone that shouldn’t have known about them and succeeded in finding them.”

The others could only guess that this was referring to Quinn.

“Now, with Hilston in control of the Blades, he no longer cares about hiding himself from the world. Even worse, our line of protection is no longer there.

“That day when Hilston went to search for you Sil, I was on board that ship as well. I knew that the Blades had decided that they would no longer be hiding themselves, so we needed to come up with a new plan.

“I was the one that had chosen to advise you Sam, and Paul To turn your companions. At the time I also took Mona from the Bree family, she is safe with us. We did so, because If need be, and we need someone else to move the dragon, there needs to be someone who can control the dragon and copy her abilities.”

At that moment, everyone on the table looked towards Sil. Even Mona didn't have the power to control a demon tier beast. Which meant the only person that could was one that had an ability as strong as that of Hilston.

The fact that Mona was still alive and was with Eno came as a shock to a lot of them, and they needed time to take everything in.

“You have always been an interesting person Sil, and we have also kept our eyes on you, just in case something like this has happened. The only thing we didn't expect was Hilston to lose that day and go into hiding, and for you to be taken away by someone else. The Dalki are going to move soon, and we need to protect the dragon at all costs.”

When Brock said he had a lot to talk about, he wasn't wrong. Still there were many things everyone wanted to ask him. Logan wanted to ask about who killed his parents, what their relationship was, but before all of that, Sam had another question before everyone else.

“I don't think we have the right to go ahead and be making decisions on our leaders behalf like this. I know everyone wants to ask questions, but there is one person that needs to be here, and that's Quinn.” Sam said. “He should know about all of this.”

Brock started to smile again.

“I'm afraid I have already told you everything that I can say. So any question you do wish to ask I will be unable to answer them. However, if you wish for me to clarify on some things that I have already spoken about then feel free. As for Quinn, you do not need to worry about him. I'm sure, Eno and Quinn will be talking right about now. And when everything is settled they will either return here together, or apart.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1008: Visiting an old planet

Quinn had been in a bit of a sombre mood after what had happened to Sil. He couldn't help but feel bad for his situation, but there was really nothing they could do for now. In a way, he also didn't think that just bringing back Vorden and Raten would help things.

It would undoubtedly stabilise the situation with someone as powerful as him, but from the way Sil spoke, Sil was the original owner of that body. At any point and time, he could take over if he wanted to. So if in the future, even with Vorden and Raten, something terrible happened, Sil would still need help.

'Maybe we can figure it out with Raten and Vorden when they are back, but we still haven't found anyone with an ability that could help.' Quinn thought. 'Even if that ability has reappeared in someone, it could be dormant in their body, or the person could just be a baby. I wish I knew more about abilities and how they worked because right now, it's like looking for a needle in a haystack.'

Today, before school was to start, the homeroom teachers had been called in for a meeting. It was a bit more casual as the meeting took place in the Teacher's lounge, where teachers generally just relaxed on the sofa or prepared for their lessons.

The one who was giving the meeting was Samantha. Quinn went ahead and sat down with Fex and Peter, who were both teachers. But Helen wasn't one so she hadn't been invited.

"I've called you all here today to talk about the first portal outing that will be taking place," Samantha announced. "Now, as you know, we fear that the tensions are quite high at the moment. So we have banned portal outings to orange portal planets for students, so they will only be able to visit the green portal planets.

"However, since there are larger groups and far more students this time, there will need to be more teachers. Now Head General Innu has agreed to go on the expedition for support. I will also be heading out, despite neither of us being teachers.

"All homeroom teachers must attend with their classes for this expedition, and students will only hunt within an area with their teachers. This is just for them to experience hunting. We will still award points for Beast crystals that will go to certain houses, but students will not just be able to go off and explore on their own. Does everyone understand?"

Quinn was actually quite pleased with the new measures they had put this time for the hunt. Although the students wouldn't have a real-world experience compared to when he went out, it was safer this way. If they had done this last time, then maybe fewer students' lives would have been lost to the Dalki.

"Are other teachers allowed to come on this trip if they wish?" Fex asked, raising his hand.

"I don't see why not. The campus will mostly be empty, so if you wish, you may." Samantha replied.

Fex was happy that at least he wouldn't be left out of this one.

With the meeting over, Quinn returned to his class and delivered the news. After doing so, a lot of the class was quite depressed.

"What's wrong? Did something happen?" Quinn asked.

Venus looked around at all the unhappy faces and decided to answer for them.

"Teacher, we aren't stupid, and we honestly don't know why the school has decided to do this, but each of us was the weakest of our schools, and they've grouped us all together. Doesn't that mean our class will do the worst?"

It seems that self-confidence was a huge issue, but rightfully so because what Venus had said wasn't a guess. It was a fact. Even with beast weapons, it only gave them a fighting chance. Perhaps they would survive but to beat the other classes in a hunt was another story altogether.

On top of that, not everyone in Quinn's homeroom class was part of the beast class. Only about half of them attended, so they were in an even worse position.

"Okay, listen up, if you want to get stronger, then when your lessons are over, instead of heading to your dorms, head back here to your homeroom classroom. I'm going to teach you all a little something." Quinn said with a smile on his face.

He had finally decided that these kids at least needed a fighting chance. Oscar was right, it would be best to prepare everyone for the war upon them, but there was a problem. Teaching everyone Qi wouldn't change the balance.

The strong would possibly just get stronger, making the gap between students stay the same. Although it might be unfair for now, Quinn had decided to teach the weakest kids in his class Qi so that they would be on an equal level as everyone else.

'I think Leo will understand what I have done.' Quinn thought.

When the lessons ended, Quinn expected a few of his students to return to him, not all of them. However, every single one was now in his classroom, wanting to see what he wanted to teach.

"Today, I'm going to teach you something that will improve your natural body strength. Your punches will be stronger, your body will move faster, and when you get hit, it will hurt a lot less, but there's one thing I want you all to promise me now." Quinn said.

"I don't want you to try to get revenge after this. If you become stronger than those that used to bully you, then take pride in that. Don't become what you hated."

Some of the students started to talk to each other, wondering why they would ever do that? But Quinn knew that some people would, and he hoped when they were put in a similar situation, they would think back to what he said right now.

"Also, it's safe to say what I'm about to teach you all should be kept a secret. Otherwise, others outside of this class might abuse the power." Quinn explained. "What I'm teaching you all today is called Har..."

When teaching the kids Qi, Quinn had chosen to rename it to Har. His reasoning for this was that he didn't want the military to know what he was doing just yet or Pure members. Word would get out of what was happening eventually. Unfortunately, Qi had a negative stigma of being attached to Pure, but at the same time was highly sought after due to the display of its powers.

Naming it Har, a technique that would just improve one's body, didn't sound that great, and that was exactly what Quinn was aiming for.

Over the next few days, the students began practising every day. There were even some students that decided it was a waste of time and had stopped showing up. Still, those that continued to learn the techniques and, using Quinn's guidance, had prevailed. It was finally time for the class to go out on their first outing.

Quinn looked at his class all geared up, ready to go through the green portal, while Peter and Fex were by his side.

"Ready class," Quinn asked, and they nodded.

Going through the teleporter, when they arrived, it was a place that Quinn recognised quite well. The shelter was larger than it was before, but there was an unforgettable feeling of the planet.

"Do you remember this place?" Peter asked.

"How could I forget? It was where we first ran into the Dalki back then." Quinn whispered back.

It was a primarily desert planet all over, and the orange buildings made from sandstone stood out. In their memories, an unforgettable place.

Samantha made sure everyone was present from Quinn's class, and then they would head off to a specific hunting area together. Classes were sent in hour intervals to not overwhelm the hunting areas and give everyone an equal amount of time. While Peter had decided to go off with Quinn and the students, Fex chose to do a bit of exploring.

'I originally came here to explore what Human life is like, and all I've done is hang out at schools. Let's experience real human life.' Fex thought.

Walking away from the training area and he headed to the main Shelter centre, where the place was filled with shops and merchants but what Fex was looking for was something else.

“That’s it, this place called a bar? There’s meant to be some really good drinks in here.” Fex said with a smile, but he stopped for a few seconds as he pushed the door open.

‘No, it can’t be. Why do I smell a vampire here, and it’s not Quinn.’

My Vampire System Chapter 1009: Something in the air

The destination had been set for Quinn and his students to leave. He had been given a map and was to guide them to a certain area, on the map one could also see the other areas and the other users with a map as well. Some of the other areas were fairly close, with the borders touching. Quinn was a little worried that this might cause some trouble, but this would always be the case with how many classes were hunting on the same planet.

It was vastly different to before when Quinn had to do his assessment. In the past, one would have to do everything on their own. From researching the best areas for hunting, to gathering the map themselves.

He had learnt a lot from those days, but it looked like the military were fast tracking things with the new students and being extra cautious. Once researching the area, Quinn was then to start a device that would time them. Then, the students in his class in groups of five, were free to hunt.

“Hey, won’t this be a little unfair?” Shiro complained. “I mean, what happens if there’s just more beasts in the other area.”

“The other teachers have assured me that they have attempted to make this as fair as possible.” Quinn replied. “However, I do have to admit, that its nearly impossible to make it entirely fair. Take this as a lesson Shiro, nothing in life is completely fair.”

The students got to work, and were fighting basic tier beasts, some of them were frightened of the beasts unable to perform well. Just like before, the class were currently going against the sand worm, who were a similar size to regular humans but had razor sharp teeth spiraling on their insides when they opened their mouths.

What surprised the students was the fact that they fared better than they had expected. Even when scared, they were able to dodge the oncoming attacks, and using their weapons they were able to tackle the beasts with ease.

'Looks like they are using Qi quite well.' Quinn said, as he felt a bit relaxed compared to his up tightness from before.

'I have to say, I am quite surprised as well.' Vincent added. 'The Qi that you have taught them isn't so noticeable when they are fighting. I suppose when you used it, it had more of an explosive effect due to combining it with your blood powers, but with the kids, unless they were to physically show off their superhuman feats, it doesn't stand out too much while giving them an edge at the same time.'

'Yes.' Quinn replied. 'We can actually thank Shiro for that, I noticed it after his fight, that no one really seemed to notice his change so much. Students and others are used to seeing incredible humans due to the beast gear, and beast gear isn't always visible on the outside.'

'Of course, this would be different if I was to attempt to teach them the second stage of Qi, but there is no need for that. At the same time, I feel if they are relying on Qi then it means that they will no longer focus on their abilities when they need to.'

Shiro, Venus and Swin were doing well using a combination of their abilities. Venus was using his ability to lure out the Sandworms while Shiro would then pluck them into the air, lastly the one that would attack them was Shiro with his duel blades. The other two students in their group, would be protecting the ability users.

Swin and Venus could also use weapons if need be when they were in trouble.

While Quinn was in the middle of watching this, he had heard a massive scream come from his left side. In an instant he had appeared by where the screaming student was, and could see that a worm had latched onto a female student's arm. Quinn quickly with his bare hand dismembered half of the Worm's body, then grabbing onto the other half, he used his second stage of Qi to create a very thin layer around where its teeth would be. It was like one was putting a thick piece of cloth under the teeth. Now Quinn could safely pull it off and cursed the worm with his bare hands.

“Are you okay?” Quinn asked. He could then see that the worm was unable to pierce through the student's armor, the girl was completely fine but she had just screamed from fear.

However, what Quinn didn't realize, was that he had just gone from one side of the hunting area, to another in an instant.

“Hey, wasn't general Hardy on the other side of the hunting area just now, how did he get here so fast?”

“I don't know maybe he ran, or he was actually closer than we thought.”

“No, I'm sure he was just with Shiro and their group, and there literally on the other side.”

Hearing these comments, Quinn just noticed what he had done.

‘Damn, I guess I'm still worried about the students. My own experience from last time is affecting me.’

Quinn wasn't relaxed at all, this place had brought a lot of bad memories for him, and he just couldn't shake the feeling that something was going to happen.

Over where Fex was at, he decided to enter the bar anyway. Inside the place was dimly lit and there were tables with stools placed all over. It was meant to be designed similar to the bars around a thousand years ago.

The people inside all looked to be middle aged men, with a few females here and there. However, he wasn't in the happy mood he was expecting to be, instead Fex was on guard. For the smell from earlier was coming from this very bar.

Fex looked around, but he mostly let his nose lead him, and that's when he found himself at a table with two dark red sofas either side. A man wearing a type of cowboy hat could be seen covering most of his face, and he had a drink in front of him.

Without saying anything, Fex sat down opposite the strange man.

“Before I would have probably dragged you from the bar, and taken you back to the vampire world myself.” Fex said. “But the new me is going to ask what exactly you are doing here. There are a lot of human students on this planet and as a teacher if your going to cause trouble, I can’t just turn a blind eye.”

The man took a swing from his drink, and then placed the glass down, he then lifted his hat a bit so he could have a look at the youngster opposite him.

“You seem quite strong, for someone so young, but if you think you could drag me out of this place, you would have to be dreaming.” The vampire stranger replied, then he took off his cowboy looking hat and placed it off to the side.

It was a vampire with a twirling gray mustache and long gray hair in a ponytail could be seen.

Seeing the vampire clearly, Fex didn’t recognize him at all, and it was blatant by the look on his face. The man then lifted up two fingers.

“It looks like either the vampires no longer teach about me no more, or you aren’t one to study.” The man said.

“I was never the studying type at school, but I can tell by your smell your just a regular vampire.” Fex said. “Now, I’ll ask you again, what are you doing here, or do I have to take you back myself?”

The man picked up the glass one more time and took a swig until it was empty, then with the glass he slammed it on top of Fex’s hand that was placed on the table.

The glass had crushed Fex hand showing the man wasn’t messing around.

“Very well, why don’t you teach me a lesson. I wanted to get an idea of how strong the new generation are anyway.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1010: No big event?

Time was going by quite quickly for Quinn, and now he was more cautious about when he would use his skills, or at least his full power. At the same time, he took this as an opportunity to practice himself. With the second stage of Qi, he was able to sense others' Qi more clearly, and could even stretch it out from his body.

However, he couldn't separate it from his body, which was what Quinn assumed was the third stage of Qi. Quinn was careful closing his eyes, listening and watching his surroundings. Seeing the flow of everyone around him, if a student's energy was disrupted or afraid he could tell they were more likely to make a mistake compared to others.

'These are the ones that need help the most, and if I can help them before there are any problems that will be great.' Quinn thought

Acting before needing to act. It also seemed like the students had mostly forgotten what he had done, since they were far too concerned with the task at hand. As time went on, the student became better at hunting beasts.

"Hey, I think our group may be able to do something, and get a decent spot." Venus said as they were taking a break looking at everyone around them.

There was another advantage Quinn's class had over other classes and it was the fact that they could hunt for longer without stopping. Some students had already figured out that when their MC cells were up, they could fight with Qi instead, and when their Qi was depleted they could switch to their MC cells to defeat the creatures.

Of course, not everyone could do this, as others needed both Qi and their abilities to defeat the basic tier beasts, and although Quinn thought this was an advantage, it really wasn't. As those with a higher level ability tended to have more MC points to use their ability for longer in the first place.

The good news was, that Quinn had to get involved less and less with his students as they gained more confidence. However, that didn't last forever. As people were actively defeating more beasts in certain areas, they were becoming more scarce.

So, Shiro and his group decided to move towards the outer edge of the hunting area. After all, this wasn't just a competition between classes, but even in their classes, their groups would receive a certain amount of points.

When going towards the edge, they found what they were looking for and continued their hunt once again. The five of them were on a large mound of sand, killing sandworms rapidly, when something unexpected had happened. A worm from their left side leapt in the air towards them.

The worm seemed to already be injured with wounds on its body, but not wanting the beast's teeth to dig into his flesh, Shiro ended up cutting it on the spot.

"Hey, that was ours!" A group of kids said, yelling as they ran over, but when they saw who was on the mound they stopped for a second and started whispering to each other.

"What do I care?!" One of the boys said as he walked over. "The beast was already nearly dead and was from our area, so hand over the crystal."

Like a magnet, Shiro and the others seemed to attract trouble.

"Wait, were you guys attempting to steal it!" Another boy said coming up from behind and could see a girl from their group had already carved the Crystal and had one in her hand.

"You know you're not meant to get involved with the other hunting areas. I'll tell you what. You hand us three crystals for that one and we'll keep quiet about this whole thing." The boy said.

The girl's hands were shaking and she had pulled out two more crystals from her pouch and was ready to hand it over to the other boys, when Swin stepped in front of her, blocking their path.

"No, if you had just asked for one crystal then we might have given it to you, but you can't just bully and demand a crystal. We won't be pushed around anymore."

The boys started frowning as if they were annoyed at what they heard. They thought just like in the past, if they were to ask someone who was weaker than them to do something, it would be done, but they were actually arguing and fighting back.

However, a smile soon appeared on one of the students' faces.

"Teacher, these kids were hunting in our hunting area and won't give us our crystals!" One of the boys shouted.

It didn't take long for their homeroom teacher to appear. A male with glasses but he looked like he permanently had a vein sticking out of his forehead.

"What is going on, the rules were made clear from the beginning, I didn't think I would have to deal with this stuff." The teacher said, The man took one look at the kids from the other class, he didn't ask any questions at all and had already made his decision.

"You guys, hand over all the crystals that you hunted in our area."

"Another one of these teachers?" Venus sighed.

"Don't worry, I can't believe they called the teacher because they can't deal with the problem, but the two of us can play that game. Hardy we need help!" Swin shouted.

A gust of wind blowing up the sand in the air flew about everywhere. They covered their eyes to see a figure appear through them, and Hardy was there. Seeing how fast Hardy was appearing to all the students, Swin knew saying they needed help Quinn would be here in an instant, and he was.

"What exactly is the problem?" Quinn asked.

As soon as the teacher saw who it was, he started to sweat.

“Oh no, there’s no problem at all, I think just both groups were hunting near the border so there was a little disagreement about who’s beast belonged to who. I’ll take these guys a little more in and keep an eye on them.”

Before Quinn could even say anything, the teacher was already off.

“Well, that wasn’t what I was expecting, where was the big fight, the epic moment where Hardy shows them how much better he is than the others.” Swin thought.

“I guess it’s no longer needed, after what Hardy did to Head general Sach, I think no one wants to mess with him now.” Venus replied.

In a way, the students thought that perhaps the pressure they received from other students might have been over for them.

— —

In the middle of the shelter, people were seen scrambling out of an establishment that was simply named ‘The bar’. They were unclear what was happening, but just knew two people were inside having a fight and the whole place was completely wrecked.

From outside several crashes and bangs were heard and the noise continued to be heard from within the bar, until eventually someone was seen being kicked through the air. Breaking the doors on their way out and landing on the hard orange ground.

“Frick this guy is tough.” Fex said getting up and wiping the blood from his mouth, his hand had already healed from the first wound. “After talking all cool like that, and then I get kicked on my backside. No this ain’t happening, not to a nobody.”

A few seconds later and the man was seen coming out from the bar.

“Whoever the owner is, I’m sorry for all the damage we have caused. I promise to pay it in full whenever I can.”

“Hey everyone!” Fex shouted standing on his two feet. “You’re kind of distracting staying here, do you mind if you scoot out of here a little bit so I can take this guy on?” Fex said.

“Oh, still haven’t given up. It’s good to know that the new generation have heart. Even if they are weaker, but it seems like after so many years no improvements were made. Weren’t you meant to be a direct descendant of the thirteenth family? If this is a direct descendant power, then the vampires may not exist for much longer.” The man said.

Fex was a little annoyed, after the man had pretended to not know him at all, now he was telling everything about him.

“That’s right, sorry, you now belong to the new tenth Cursed family is it, well it seems they are clearly the weakest of the families.” the man said.

“Really, well let’s see if you’ve seen this before.” Fex said, as he concentrated and in his hands a giant needle was starting to form,

“A blood weapon and without using a blood crystal, now that is impressive, maybe I was wrong after all. Let’s go for round two then.” The man said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1011 – Can I stab you?

It didn’t take long for the mysterious Vampire to figure out what had been summoned seemingly out of nowhere from Fex. However, it did seem to surprise the Vampire as well.

“I’m interested in finding out if this was something you found out yourself or a technique shared amongst the new generation.” The Vampire said.

This gave a brief break for the moment. Right now, the two of them weren’t being confrontational. In all honesty, Fex’s mind was racing at the moment.

For one, his wounds were healing slower than his opponents. He had gotten a few hits in while fighting in the bar, but there didn't seem to be a scratch on the man.

The second reason was what he was now holding in his hand.

'What the hell am I meant to do now!' Fex thought. 'I summoned my blood weapon in a panic, but there's no one to use it on.'

Fex's blood weapon, which was black in colour but clear like glass, needed blood to activate it. This was true for all blood weapons, but Fex's needed blood as an even bigger requirement. The needle itself had to be filled with blood, and then either injected into humans to empower them with strength, or the needle could be injected into himself.

'I can't exactly just stab my needle into one of these random onlookers. They would never let me do such a thing, and it's wrong if I just force them.'

"Is something wrong, or do you need me to attack you first?" The Vampire said, charging forward and now was directly in Fex's face. Lifting up his fingers, red blood strings rose, tangling the Vampire's legs up.

"I wasn't just doing nothing but standing still!" Fex shouted. Using his blood control, any red string left on the ground could be moved slightly without requiring it to be attached to his fingers. Then grabbing the needle, Fex stabbed it right into the Vampire's shoulder, digging in a few inches before it had stopped entirely.

"It's weak, but perhaps because you have no blood, there are plenty of people around you. Why don't you use one of them?" The Vampire said, taking a step forward with a smile.

Looking into the Vampire's eyes, Fex could feel something odd, and at the same time, no regular vampire should ever be this strong. He was one of the strongest nobles. Why was he afraid?

"And what the hell is with this taunting!" Fex said as he pulled his needle out with his string attached to the little loop at the end and started to swing it wildly like a windmill in the air.

Once again, Fex swung out the needle straight, and it came out fast and heavy. This time the force seemed far more substantial than before. Still, the strings seemingly around the Vampire started to disappear, and the Vampire had avoided the attack.

“Yes! That’s it! You have a difficult opponent in front of you. Use your mind to evolve more. One can’t magically get stronger in the middle of a fight, but they can use their mind to their advantage!” The Vampire shouted. “You need to show me everything you have. “

“Teacher Fex, what is going on here? Who is this man you are fighting?” Samantha asked.

While head general Innu went out with the students, he would be in charge of the teachers and the students, and Samantha was left behind to stay in the Shelter. Coordinating if anything was to happen. She had been alerted that there was a commotion going on but didn’t expect to see another teacher in the middle of a fight.

“This is...” Fex was struggling to come up with an answer. He had actually started the confrontation, but he couldn’t exactly just say he was a vampire, but what reason could he give.

While Fex was unfocused, a fist came out from the Vampire, but a wall suddenly rose in the middle of the two of them. Samantha immediately decided to act once she saw her teacher was about to be hurt.

However, the fist had gone through the wall, breaking it to pieces, but it allowed Fex enough time to avoid the punch coming his way. Instead, he wrapped the arm with string, and then using all of his strength he lifted the Vampire in the air, and slammed him into one of the buildings on the opposite end of the street they were fighting in.

“He’s from Pure!” Fex finally figured out a good excuse, and saying those words finally got most of the people to clear the area.

Samantha rushed over to Fex’s side and looked at him for a few seconds, up and down. She even patted him in certain areas, which made Fex blush a bit while smelling the scent coming from her hair.

“Good, it doesn’t seem like you’re hurt,” Samantha said.

The sound of rubble could be heard moving, and the Vampire stood up with his head bleeding, but the rest of his body looked to have hardly been injured. Fex didn't think it would be over for a second, but just wanted a small break from the constant fighting.

"Hey, do you mind if I ask you something?" Fex said as he pulled over his black needle with a piece of string towards his hand. "Can I stab you with this?"

"What are you crazy!" Samantha shouted. "A person is attacking us right now, and you want to stab me?"

"Wait, let me explain! Think about it. There's a reason I asked. I didn't just want to stab you!" Fex argued, but the Vampire was increasingly getting closer. That's when Fex noticed, the Vampire wasn't charging forward.

In fact, the Vampire hardly charged forward during the fight, as if he was always waiting for Fex to show him something.

Then for a brief second, the Vampire looked up towards the corner of the sky and looked back down at the two.

"I still don't know if you are ready for what's about to come, but it seems somehow you truly are united with the humans, but that will soon be put to the test." The Vampire said.

"What do you mean!" Fex asked, no longer wanting to engage. If the other Vampire wasn't attacking, it would give him at least time to recover.

"Sometimes, people are unable to see what's right in front of them." The Vampire said, looking at Samantha this time, and feeling a little uncomfortable, she shifted towards Fex, but then seeing the black needle in his hand, she moved back away.

"Around two years ago, the Dalki came to this planet. It was an event that was recorded and spread to the whole world. It would be impossible for you to not know of it."

Of course, Samantha knew exactly what event the man was talking about. At the time, the student known as Quinn and a few others had run into a Dalki here.

“Do you think that was a coincidence, that a stray scout would just land here for no reason? Did no one stop to think if there was an alternative task, a mission that it was sent here to do?” The Vampire continued.

Of course, the military had done some research into it, but it really looked like a stray scout from the Dalki had attacked, and they were unable to find anything else.

“The Dalki are smarter than you humans take credit for, especially with him pulling strings. They will soon be upon us. It will be interesting to see if you still keep your resolve to not hurt humans when it comes to their life of yours.” The Vampire said. “I have run out of time.” and as quickly as he appeared, he promptly disappeared as well.

The two of them were left there to take in the mysterious person’s words. The one thing that stuck out to them was that the Dalki was coming, and it was quite clear he was claiming that they would be coming to this planet.

The question was, when?

My Vampire System Chapter 1012 – Who, who, who

Out in the hunting field, it was almost time for the students to finish up with their first hunt. They were down to the final fifteen minutes, and even though it was exhausting for them, they needed to slug through if they had any chances or hopes of becoming one of the top classes.

After the hunt was done, they would go to meet Head general Innu, who was in charge of the expedition.

Innu wanted to count the number of crystals each class got in front of them all to see how well each group did. The Shelter didn’t have a space large enough for all the students and teachers to gather, so instead, Innu had picked a different place for them all to meet. It was located outside the Shelter not too

far from it, a zone that was void of beasts, and even if there were some, basic tier beasts would be too afraid of a gathering of that size to do anything.

During this hunt, what had surprised Quinn was the fighting that had happened moments ago between his students and others. When he had been called, he expected one of the teachers to talk back to him. However, everything was solved with him just appearing.

Even he was surprised about this.

'I guess showing your power off once in a while can be a good thing.' Quinn thought with a smile.

'Careful there.' Vincent said. 'You don't want to turn into them, do you? It would be best if you also heard both sides of the story before just claiming your students were in the right, no matter how likely it might be the other side.'

'I know, I know, it's just nice to not have any arguments for a change.' Quinn replied, but his voice at the end started to trail off. The reason being, a scent had entered his nose. It wasn't just any scent either. It was clearly one of another vampire.

Turning his head around, he attempted to see where it was. Maybe Fex had come back or someone else, but he didn't see any of them. Eventually, Quinn spotted someone in the desert off in the distance. Slowly making their way to Quinn and the students.

'What do I do? It's a vampire, all the way out here. Why would one be here, and he's coming towards the students. I have to stop him or see what they're doing here.' Quinn thought.

However, he couldn't just leave the students alone unattended.

"Peter!" Quinn shouted. Although Peter wasn't acting as Quinn's assistant in this little assessment, his hunting ground wasn't too far away from theirs, and he was hoping he would hear his call.

It didn't take long for Peter to be running across the desert, kicking up piles of sand as he ran heavy-footed towards Quinn's side.

“You called me?” Peter asked, but it didn’t take that long for him to see what Quinn was looking at. Although, it was hard to make out precisely what the figure looked like due to the heat waves warping the image of the man.

“I need you to look after the students while I go and see if this is trouble,” Quinn replied.

“That’s okay, my teacher doesn’t need me. I kept looking for a chance to leave.” Meanwhile, Peter’s teacher was actually tossing and turning, looking everywhere for him. He hadn’t said a word about leaving. Still, she wasn’t worried. He was the unkillable zombie, after all.

“But Quinn, let me know if you need back up,” Peter said.

Walking out into the desert, Quinn was wondering who he would meet. For some reason, his heart was beating rapidly.

‘I think I caught a glimpse, but I can’t be sure.’ Quinn thought.

The students who saw their teacher Hardy leave, when he reached a certain point, it was as if Hardy had just disappeared, and it was true for Peter as well. Looking out in the desert, he now couldn’t see a thing, the man he saw before or Quinn.

“Don’t worry everyone, get back to work. You guys want to win this beast hunting coalition, right!?”

When Quinn had finally arrived, he was standing opposite the man, they both looked at each other, and he could now see who it was clearly. The man had a curly moustache, and his hair was done up in a ponytail, but everything else Quinn had seen before.

The deep wrinkles on his forehead, the narrowness of his eyes and the confident look he had with him at all times.

“At least you aren’t quick to act and attack me like that other one, so should I introduce myself?” The man asked.

Quinn shook his head.

“There is no need. I already know who you are, Richard Eno.”

Finally, Quinn had met the mysterious man after all this time, the grand scientist of the human race and also the first king. So many questions were running through Quinn’s head he didn’t know which one to ask first.

Why did he decide to trick Arthur, why wasn’t he asleep in his tomb, what was his goal in helping Vincent create the vampire system, and was he on the humans’ side, or the vampires’ side. For all Quinn knew, he could be working with Jim in helping the Dalki, stringing them all along just for some sick game of his.

“Close.” The man said. ‘But I’m not really Richard Eno, so all those questions you have you can keep in your head for a second while I explain what I’m doing here, and you should hear me out because I don’t have much time. “

Even though Quinn didn’t understand what Eno was saying, everything seemed like a wild goose chase. He wanted to do everything he could to just run over to Enos’ side and strap him in before he could run off, but his first line had shocked Quinn a bit.

‘He isn’t Richard Eno?’

That didn’t make any sense. Quinn was sure of it, he certainly looked like the Eno he had seen, and even Vincent had confirmed that he looked similar to the man in the books. Still wanting to find out what Eno at least had to say, he kept his mouth shut, for now.

“What you don’t know, is currently at this moment, there are three others with a very similar appearance to myself meeting with others and delivering a message. This is a test Quinn, a test to see if you can succeed.”

At the same time, over where General Innu was, a man with a similar appearance was standing in front of him. One of his sergeants who was by his side had gone to try and intercept the man from getting

closer, but after grabbing his wrist, twisting it and kicking him at the back of the leg, almost too fast for them to see, they were sure to listen to what the man had to say.

And he was saying similar words to Innu right now, but for Quinn, there was an additional message.

“You have managed to accomplish what I never thought was possible, but somehow currently, the Human race is working together again, and without realising it, I think the Cursed faction is the glue that is holding it all together.

“With all three of your forces, I see a chance of you defeating the Dalki. Alone it is impossible. I need to see how strong that glue is, Quinn, how strong, and how long do you think that glue will last? You are hiding secrets from them, deep dark secrets that if they found out about them, would they see you as a friend or an enemy.

“Maybe, we’ll find out today,” Eno stated and moved his arms, dragging them across the desert.

For a second, a screen appeared in front of Quinn, but it was distorted. It was the system screen, but it looked as if it wasn’t working correctly and was struggling to do something. Finally, the screen appeared, but the surrounding areas were all flashing red.

[Your system has been overridden]

[A quest has been granted]

“Protect as many lives as possible, Quinn.”

[New quest received]

[Defeat the incoming Dalki invasion]

[0/50 Dalki defeated]

My Vampire System Chapter 1013 – Taking over

It was the first time Quinn had ever received a message about his system being overridden, and he was wondering just how it would have affected such a thing. After the system had been overridden, the main thing that had occurred was receiving a sudden quest, and it was a quest Quinn wasn't expecting at all.

'Did he override the system just to give me that quest?' Quinn thought as he lifted his head to confront the man who had dropped this giant of a bombshell, but he was no longer in front of him.

"Damn you, Richard Eno! You can't just go off and treat everything as if it's a game. People's lives are at stake!" Quinn shouted in anger, but there was no one to hear his words.

Without the man responsible to ask any questions, Quinn now had to figure out things for himself. Usually, Quinn would receive a quest when he came face to face with an enemy, but this time was different. There wasn't a Dalki in sight.

He could only assume it had something to do with the system being overridden. Still, he knew that they would be coming soon, because Eno had used the words, 'Running out of time' And if he had disappeared so quickly, it was most likely the case. The main worrying thing was the apparent invasion that was coming soon were a group of 50 Dalki.

It was only two years ago that Quinn had come face to face with a single Dalki. With him and his group of friends, they still didn't kill the Dalki and had to rely on Leo to save them.

Thinking about this, the first thing Quinn attempted to do was pull up the system to see if everything was working all okay. It seemed to be fine from a few test abilities he had activated using the system, and it looked like he could use it combat wise.

'With fifty Dalki, depending on the number of spikes they have, I don't think everyone that is here is currently going to be enough, not when the students also need to be protected.' Quinn thought.

The beast hunts were done in phases, and currently, two groups of classes were out together. In total, that would amount to 30,000 inexperienced students. The last thing Quinn wanted to see was all of them lying on the floor dead.

'To save as many lives as we can, I'm going to need as much help as I can get. If I can call Sil, Logan, Linda and all the others, we can stop this.'

Straight away, the first thing he attempted to do was get in contact with Logan through the mask. However, after several attempts, there was nothing. Not even a connection or signal had been made. No matter who Quinn tried to get in contact with, it just wouldn't work.

'Is this Enos' doing, or the Dalki?' Quinn thought, but he couldn't get Enos' words out of his head that this was all some test. Right now, Quinn was afraid, if he used a shadow link to travel to one of the Cursed on the ship, how would he get back?

And he was right to think this way because all of the teleporters and communication devices throughout the whole Shelter had been jammed.

There was one more thing Quinn thought he could try, and that was summoning his vampire knights.

'I'm sorry Leo, I know you're busy, but you will understand.'

[Error]

[Override in place, this skill may not be used]

When using the other skills throughout the system, no such message had appeared. It was only when trying to use this skill.

'It has to be Eno, because of what he did. When he said this is a test, does it mean I'm not allowed to get any outside help?'

'This truly meant that Quinn was now alone. He didn't hesitate and, using all his speed, ran back to where all his students were and surprisingly they had already been gathered up by Peter. They all saw Quinn come in at super speed but hiding his powers was the least of his worries right now.

"What's going on?" Quinn asked.

"It wasn't too long ago, but while you were dealing with your thing, I received a message from Innu, telling everyone to meet up at the arranged location immediately. It sounded pretty urgent, but we wanted to wait for you." Peter said.

He was curious and wanted to ask Quinn some questions, but from the serious look on his face, he thought it was best to ask a little later.

'Innu asked to meet up quickly. I remember Eno saying something like he was delivering the message to three other people, was Innu one of them? If he's gathering up all the students, is he trying to get it so all the teachers can protect them or head back into the Shelter?

'If all the students are gathered together, this might be a good thing, it's going to be difficult, but if we can defeat the Dalki without having any of the kids get involved, I can protect them all if they're in one place.'

Peter and Quinn were both off, and the students didn't dare ask questions about what was going on. It was the first time they had seen Head general Hardy have such a severe look. For Swin, Venus and Shiro, it was the same look he had when he was filled with rage at Erlen.

On the way there, Quinn informed Peter of the possibility of what they could be going up against and soon they had arrived at the meeting point.

Quinn's group were one of the last ones to arrive, and he could see all hundred teachers equipped with their best gear on and had a concerned look on their faces.

Using his inspect skill, Quinn was trying to see what help he had. Honestly, the teachers were a mixed bag. There were a couple of sergeants that Innu had brought with him, but the teachers, some of them

were only a little better than the top students when it came to fighting, and Quinn wouldn't doubt that there were some strong students as well.

Quinn had asked his students to line up, in their position with the other students, while in front of them, all hundred of the teachers had huddled in a type of group while talking to each other, and Innu was taking the lead.

"Now that all the teachers are here, I can go through everything from the beginning," Innu said. "We have just been informed that there could possibly be a Dalki invasion on this planet any second now. We don't know if this is true or not, but I will treat it like the truth. We have to for such a big threat."

"I have tried to communicate with the Shelter, but it seems like no one else or I can get through. We don't know where the Dalki will show up, but the Shelter is probably what they will be looking for and is the most essential thing that needs protecting.

"I want everyone to remember that we are soldiers, and even the students out there have trained so they can fight as well. I can't imagine the Dalki sending a force larger than ten to deal with this planet since the forces are low, but I bet they weren't expecting us to be having our expedition out here at the same time as their attack.

"We don't know where they will be attacking, so I suggest us teachers split up into groups of ten, taking a squad of your strongest students, and a core of us will stay behind to protect the shelter."

Hearing this, Quinn thought he had spoken too soon. There wasn't enough information to be making risky moves like Innu was suggesting, and at the same time, Innu was wrong. There were fifty of them coming.

"Innu, we shouldn't do that." Quinn interrupted.

Innu looked at who was speaking and saw that it was general Hardy, he didn't like him in the first place, and now he was interrupting him while this was a chance for them to claim glory against the Dalki.

"We don't know how large or strong of a force the Dalki will be, and the students at the moment haven't graduated. No matter how much we treat them like soldiers, this is only their first outing. You

put them out there to rely on, and they will freeze. All of their blood will be on our hands as teachers!" Quinn shouted.

By now, the students at the front were able to hear everything that was being said, and they were nervous talking between them as they heard the words Dalki. They were already shivering with fear.

"Look what you have done!" Innu shouted, "Of course, the students will be frightened to do battle now, but when forced, humans do extraordinary things."

"So you weren't even going to tell the students what they would be up against? What they would be risking their lives for! You're sick Innu. I don't care anymore. You are to step down, and I will take command from here on out!" Quinn demanded.

Innu started laughing.

"You think the teachers here will agree to that? Do you think anyone will follow you? Who are you, Hardy? You are a nobody. I personally fought in the last war and rose to the rank of head general. You may have the same rank as me in name, but it means nothing. I don't take orders from you!" Innu shouted back.

It was clear Innu wasn't going to listen, and with him taking command, he was sending all the students to a bloodfest, Quinn had no choice.

"I order you to listen to me!" Quinn shouted. "I will now be taking command of everyone and all the students here."

"You can't do that, you fool! Didn't you listen to anything I said?" Innu shouted again.

But Quinn's eyes started to glow a ferocious red, making him back away and remembering their first meeting.

"I did listen, but I'm not a nobody," Quinn said, looking at all of the teachers. There was one thing Innu was right about, that they respected and trusted Innu more than him. He could see it in their eyes. So he only had one choice.

"I am Quinn Talen, head of the Cursed faction and one of the three world leaders. I will be taking over as commander from this point onwards!"

"He's who..." Innu said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1014: A mistake!

I took a lot for Quinn to finally reveal himself. He didn't want to but what was the point when his main goal was changing the system so people's lives would be better. If the people were dead, then it didn't matter how much he changed the system.

After announcing his name, he thought that would be the end of it, but suddenly some of the teachers started to crack. They let out a few stifled laughs and even Innu started to laugh hysterically.

"We know you're just some unknown from the Cursed faction!" Innu laughed. "To actually claim that you are their leader, what would a world leader even be doing attempting to be a teacher? Even a head general being a teacher is a stretch!"

However, the students from Hardy's class weren't so quick to judge. They knew that Hardy was from the Cursed faction and knew that he had done so many amazing things, so they had tried to do their own research to find out just who Hardy was.

When looking however, they didn't find anything, but when they started to search the Cursed faction and watched videos of the leader fighting, although Hardy and the leader from the videos weren't exactly identical, they did notice some features that were similar.

However, Innu disregarded that a world leader would ever become a teacher and put their senses straight.

From the odd looking eyes of the teachers, Quinn was annoyed.

“Do I really need to prove who I am by showing you? I guess even showing you the shadow ability wouldn’t be enough.” Quinn said, as he entered his shadow space and shadows started to surround his hands.

The second Innu saw his ability, his eyes widened and his heart began to thump so incredibly loud that a pain was felt in his chest for a second. Innu was so confident that this person wasn’t Quinn and this was just an excuse. He believed he already knew what his ability was – a form of mind control, but now seeing the shadow there was a possibility he was telling the truth.

The shadow soon disappeared and now held in his hands in front of everyone, was Quinn’s platinum ID card, placing his fingers on the front, the card started to light up slightly proving that it was him.

In nearly an instant, the teachers who were making fun of him, all started to bow down out of respect and fear. They had to treat him just as they would treat Oscar, after all he supposedly controlled a force that was equal to the military’s in strength. Quinn was a single person who had so much power that no one would dare cross them.

Innu took a good look at the platinum card and stumbled a few steps back before eventually falling on his backside. He got up quickly and also bowed.

‘Damn him, is this a trick! It can’t be, that’s the platinum card only given to the world leaders. What the hell was a man like that doing being a teacher? What happens if my words and his make it so the two groups clash against each other!’ Innu was panicking, but Quinn didn’t care for all that now.

“Wow, so he is the Cursed faction leader. We had the leader teaching us this whole time!” Swin said with a big smile on his face.

The students under Quinn were even more impressed that the Cursed faction took so much time to look after students at the academy. The world’s opinion of the Cursed faction was bad, but perhaps Quinn in the few weeks he had spent as a teacher had managed to change some minds.

“Okay, everyone listen up!” Quinn shouted in a voice so loud and booming that it could even hit the students at the very back of the thirty thousand student group. This was because he was able to use a form of Qi to project his voice louder than humanly possible.

“The Dalki are coming to attack this planet. It is not a question of if but when. They are coming and we need to prepare. If you want to live, I need you to do whatever you can to listen to me, does everyone understand!”

“Yes sir!” All of the students shouted in unison.

For some reason, the students were empowered knowing that a world leader was with them. Still they were frightened, they had only just fought against beasts not too long ago and now were supposedly going up against the Dalki. They could have never imagined such a thing just a few hours ago.

Quinn continued to give instructions, organizing the students based on what abilities they had, trying to set up a strong formation. He had the teachers help him, including Innu. Surprisingly to Quinn, Innu was good at something as he had the information of the strongest students and more in his head that could be put to good use.

‘It was clear Innu didn’t like being ordered around, but even he understood not to question Quinn.’

While the students were getting ready, Quinn wondered if they should head back to the shelter as it could possibly be a better place to protect, but it was some distance away from where they were currently.

‘Eno, just what is your goal in all of this? If you knew the attack was happening and you wanted to save humans lives, then why won’t you let me get any help? Are you trying to reveal my secret to everyone?’

There was also another question on Quinn’s mind, there was the possibility that depending on what happened, his secrets would be revealed. But right now that wasn’t his main concern. If his secret now had to be shown to the whole world, of what he could do and who he was, as long as he could save the others lives then that was fine with him.

— —

At the same time, Oscar, who was still at the newly built school base in his office, had received an urgent report from one of his head generals that was in charge of the scouting section.

“Supreme commander, we have a problem. A ship has suddenly just teleported in the area of planet Caladi.”

Oscar knew straight away it was where Quinn and the other students were currently.

“Send them support immediately, we can’t let those students be harmed, and get everyone to return to Earth as soon as possible.” Oscar ordered.

“Sir, that’s the problem. All of our teleporters on the planet are currently not working. We can’t get through on any communication devices either. I have sent a support ship with my own strongest men, but even going through the teleport station it will be a while for them to get there.’

This had never happened before, even the Dalki in the first war and when having confrontations on other beast planets had never been able to jam their teleporters. It was a first for the human race going up against this type of thing.

‘So the war has started and Quinn, you are in the middle of it. In a way I am thankful that at least you are there. Please Quinn, I am counting on you to make this the first victory for the human race. It will give us great morale as we go forward.’

‘Also, protect as many lives as possible.’

—

Back in the sandy desert, after organising the students into certain squads and assigning teachers to lead them, Quinn was ready to move out. If possible Quinn didn’t want any of the students to fight, but with fifty Dalki, even Quinn couldn’t guarantee that they wouldn’t get past him.

The aim was with a teacher leading a squad of students they could fight at least one until Quinn could come and help.

'I still haven't seen them arrive yet, we might have time to head to the shelter.' Quinn thought as he was ready to make the announcement.

At that moment, all of the students could see behind Quinn something falling through the sky. Turning around after seeing their concerned faces, Quinn could now see it too. There were black pods falling from the sky, burning as they went through the planet's atmosphere.

Most of them were heading towards their direction and that's when Quinn had realised his mistake.

'Wait, Eno said he spoke to three people? If that includes me and Innu, then that means he spoke to another. Were they in the shelter?'

The pods came crash-landing in the desert ahead of where the students were, each landing created giant piles of sand thrown in the air, and the force shook the ground violently.

The number of pods didn't stop falling into the ground.

"How many Dalki are invading?!" Innu said as he saw the pods land, knowing full well how tough of a battle this would be.

At the same time, several pods had also crashed into the shelter.

'Damn it! They landed at the shelter as well! I just hope there is someone there that can deal with them.'

My Vampire System Chapter 1015 – The Noble vampire

Inside the Shelter Fex and Samantha were left standing there looking at the destroyed house in front of them. The onlookers that had gone away for a few seconds, soon returned to have a look once again.

However, making sure no one was being nosy with what was going on, Samantha quickly built two walls at the end of the street so no onlookers would come to where they were.

“Okay, it’s time for you to explain yourself.” Samantha said.

“Me explain myself, what do you mean by that?” Fex asked. He thought he had just gotten out of the fiery pit of trouble, and now someone else was giving him a grilling.

‘When I wanted an adventure this wasn’t what I had In mind.’ Fex thought.

“What I’m talking about is what that stranger was saying. He was saying some things that sounded a bit odd, as if he knew you? At least he made it out that way.” Samantha questioned.

“How am I meant to know what he meant?” Fex said, getting defensive and moving away from Samantha. “There’s a bunch of crazy people in this world. He literally slammed a glass on my hand out of nowhere.”

Seeing Fex lift up his hand to show the wound, Samantha looked at it strangely, scrunching up her face, because she saw no such wound on his hand at all. It looked completely fine.

“I’m starting to think maybe you’re the crazy one, when I get back I’m going to request that a psych evaluation be put on all our teachers to check your mental health. We can’t have someone like you teaching our students. What do you even teach anyway?”

Even though Fex thought he was a little in the wrong for what had happened, he started to get annoyed at how this girl was treating him.

“Look out!” Fex shouted, using his strings, he soon wrapped Samantha up in them and pulled her towards him, carrying her under his arm. A few seconds later and a loud bang was heard. Following it, a violent shake of the ground with parts of dirt falling from the sky like it was raining.

When the shaking had stopped and the rain of dirt ended, she could see that her and Fex were on a house roof quite away from where they were before.

'How did we get up here so fast?' She thought, but soon her thoughts were concentrated on something else.

"What is that black egg looking thing?" Fex asked, looking down at the destroyed Shelter. It wasn't just where they were, there were five space pods in total that had landed in different places around the Shelter. Causing a large crater and destroying everything within thirty meters as it landed.

A few seconds later, and a piercing siren noise sounded, going off. Loud enough for everyone in the Shelter to hear.

"What's that sound?" Fex asked, still startled at everything happening.

"Didn't you go to school, and you're a teacher!" Samantha said annoyedly, hitting Fex on his t.h.i.g.h so he could set her free. "That sound, it means the Dalki have arrived. The Dalki are attacking!"

The sounds of screams filled the air, from panic, as they headed to the emergency protection zones, and Samantha, just hearing them started sweating frantically. In the distance she could see mechs being piloted, landing where the other pods were. She then jumped down from the building, and created a platform for herself with her ability, moving it towards the black pod.

She got in a fighting stance and was ready. The black pod started to produce steam as its front doors were being opened up. She knew how hard the outside of the Dalki ships were and the pod looked to be made of the same material. It was pointless to attack such a thing, but she was prepared.

Then, when the door started to lift itself open, a hand could be seen reaching out with a claw on the end, it pushed itself forward and its large body with its scale-like features could be seen.

'That thing, it looks like Borden, so these are the Dalki that Quinn is always talking about. If they are as strong as Borden, and there are five of them. We're in trouble.' Fex thought.

As soon as its upper body was out from the shell, Samantha moved all nine of her sharp tails and shot them straight towards the Dalki. The tips of her tails suddenly changed a slight colour as she activated her soul weapon wasting no time.

The Dalki still wasn't completely free from whatever it was trying to get out of, and was a sitting duck to the spikes as each one pierced its body. Green blood then started to ooze from the attack, and it shouted in pain.

"You b*tch!" The Dalki g.r.o.a.n.e.d and soon kicked open the bottom part. It was at this point that Fex noticed the strange egg looked like a type of ship inside, but the black material was something similar to what the vampires would use as well.

What was strange, was even though the Dalki was full of holes and the tails had impaled its body, it was smiling. At that point, it lifted its arms and swung them down smashing all of the tails, breaking them leaving the pointed parts in its body. Pulling one of them out that had dug into its shoulder, it threw it towards Samantha, and then pulled out the rest, throwing them all towards her.

Her own attack was being used against her. Raising a wall was the only thing she could do, but the attacks had gone through them all, which came as a surprise to her, but the very last wall it looked like it was losing momentum.

"No you idiot, the Dalki is still coming towards you!" Fex shouted as a fist was seen breaking through the last wall, ready to grab Samantha, but she suddenly felt her back bend slightly, it wasn't an action of her own, and the Dalki could now see some red string wrapped around its hand.

"Screw you!" Fex shouted, pulling himself towards the Dalki, and kicking it in the c.h.e.s.t away from Samantha. It stumbled a little backwards, but soon pulled on the red strings that Fex was using, dragging his body upright.

The two of them now were in a tug of war match with Fex's string, with the Dalki's hard skin the string was unable to pierce through like it would usually do, as for Fex, although the string was being produced from his fingers, he felt like his hand was going to snap off at any second.

'He's holding his own in a battle of strength against a Dalki?' Samantha thought.

A human couldn't match the strength of the Dalki. Even some with the best gear couldn't, so how could an ordinary teacher.

What she was surprised at was how her initial attack hadn't killed the Dalki in the first place.

If it was coming from another earth user she would understand, but Samantha was a head general. One of the strongest people the military had to offer. If they couldn't kill a Dalki, the human race would have already lost this war. When looking at the Dalki closely, that's when she noticed it wasn't a one spiked Dalki, but two.

Soon, Fex knew he would be pulled forward so he had no choice.

"Hey, can you promise me something, you have to keep this a secret okay?!" Fex grunted, and then with his other hand free, he fired off a single large blood swipe towards the Dalki. Taking the hit on, it pierced the Dalki's skin slightly. While having the Dalki in place, Fex continued to use the red aura strings on the Dalki.

It was risk he had to take. He knew the opponent in front of him couldn't be beaten with just his physical strength and string. He needed to use his abilities.

The red strike hit the Dalki again and again, and more blood was being split, but Fex just felt that the tugging was getting stronger, not weaker. Eventually, he had no choice but to let go of the string holding the Dalki.

"This guy just won't fall. He was already injured by you? What's it going to take to kill this guy?!" Fex said.

"Watch out!" Samantha shouted, but it was too late. The Dalki had already hit Fex straight in the face, sending his body flying and hitting a building crashing through the walls.

Seeing it, Samantha partly felt like it was her fault. After her initial attack had failed, she had done nothing to help while he was busy fighting. But it was safe to say that no human would be able to recover from something like that.

The two spiked Dalki, now on the verge of death, were moving faster and stronger than ever.

“ARGHH!” Samantha screamed as she summoned the nine tails again and attempted to hit the Dalki. Still, it managed to avoid the first two attacks and avoided the sharp coloured tips. It then punched the earth part of the tails, destroying them.

The Dalki had already figured out that only her soul weapon, part of her ability, was what managed to injure it.

‘A two spiked Dalki, are the rest of them two spiked as well? Why would they send such a large force to deal with us? On a small planet like this?’

Not giving up, Samantha summoned her tails again, draining her of her MC points. She attempted to move her tips faster, then when all nine of them came at the Dalki at the same time, she saw something else speed past her.

The Dalki smashed through all of the tails with his hand, but a black haired young man, with a black needle in his hand, had pierced the Dalki right in the stomach. Soon it started to fill up with green liquid.

Taking the needle out, she was wondering what the young man was going to do next, lifting up the needle, he stabbed it into himself.

“What the hell is he doing?!” She thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1016 – The power of green blood

The Shelter was dealing with more trouble than they could handle. It was chaos inside, but most of the citizens had managed to go to the underground emergency locations in the Shelter. They were built in case anything like this did occur.

There was also a teleporter in these locations, but today they did not work, and they just had to hope that the glathrium metal bunkers they were in, would hold. The Shelter just wasn't that well equipped to deal with this type of attack.

Even though only five black pods had landed in the Shelter, the Dalki that had emerged from them were stronger than they had expected. Two of them were one spiked Dalki. The military personnel, including the Travelers, were fighting against them.

They were slowly damaging the Dalki, but it was only making the situation worse. Thankfully the mechs were able to hold them where they were. The travellers that were assisting weren't high level and didn't even have decent beast gear on. This was because it was a green portal planet.

The only beasts that would appear on such a planet were basic and intermediate tier beasts. Attracting beginners and those who wished for a safe life.

However, the situation was a lot worse in another area. For a two spiked Dalki other than the one Fex was dealing with was causing a rampage. The mechs that had come to deal with it had already been destroyed, along with the buildings around it.

Civilians that hadn't escaped were crushed, and those hiding in their homes had no chance of surviving.

In the centre of the Shelter, standing on top of a tall building on a flat surface, was a man with a grey ponytail.

"The military is doing as expected, but that vampire boy is doing better than I thought. This is quite interesting. Still, a head general and a vampire noble who is a descendant required to take on a single two spike. This was not the hope I was looking for." Eno commented, at that moment, something large landed behind the man. He could feel the vibration of the ground he was on.

Eno turned around and could see another two spiked Dalki standing behind him, staring at him.

"Did you think you could hide up here?" Dalki spoke.

“I should have known,” Eno said. “There were five pods, so three of them were two spikes and the other two, two spikes. I underestimated the level of forces that you would send. Three two spiked Dalki will be too much for them, I guess I should attempt to help them out a little bit.”

Charging in Enos’ hand was covered entirely in red. It looked like blood hardening but soon shaped itself into a spiral and spun like a drill. The Dalki didn’t know what to do as the movements were far faster than it had expected.

It raised its hands, but the blood drill went through the hard, almost impenetrable skin, and once it went through its arms, it continued to go through its c.h.e.s.t, spinning the blood in all directions and even landing back on Enos’ face.

“There is a great weakness you Dalki have,” Eno said. “Your race may be a threat to humans, but you’re no threat to me. Do you know why? Because your blood was meant to empower us.”

He placed his b.a.r.e hand on the wound of the Dalki and licked it, allowing the green energy to empower his body. Then jumping up in the air, he punched the Dalki as he went back down, causing the two of them to crash through the building, going down from floor to floor.

However, with the Dalki’s wound being a serious one, he too was getting stronger mid fall. The Dalki grabbed Eno by the legs. Before he landed at the very bottom, he swung his body like a baseball onto the ground.

Now, Enos’ body was unmoving, but his eyes were still alive.

‘Maybe me trying to help has just made the job harder since I could not finish the job. It looks like my time is over, but I will report everything I have seen to the others.’

The Dalki, standing up from the ground, roared in anger before stomping on top of Enos’ head, spattering it like a tomato.

Over where one of the other two spiked Dalki was battling for its life, Fex had just stabbed the needle into himself. The power from the Dalki was injected into him, but the energy inside him was far more than he expected.

‘What is this, what is going on.’ It was almost too much for him to comprehend.

What Fex didn’t realise was his soul weapon already increased his abilities when used with human blood. Putting Dalki blood, he was having not just the effect of his soul weapon but that of the blood as well.

The Dalki wasn’t just going to stand there and decided to throw a punch towards the boy standing in front of him, but his arm had been stopped by red pieces of string. It was coming from the boy, but he was a lot stronger than last time.

Pulling strings with his hand, he was able to pull the arm away, and then punched the Dalki in the c.h.e.s.t. It took a step back, but that wasn’t the only hit, soon after, a flurry of punches came towards the Dalki’s c.h.e.s.t as Fex felt more powerful than he ever did before.

“It’s like I’m super Fex!” He shouted punch after punch. Now the green liquid was spewing as its hard scales were doing nothing. Fists of green blood were now splurging out.

“No, you can’t injure him slowly like that.” Samantha thought, watching. “The Dalki, it’s hard to tell when one is on the verge of death. At this rate, if the Dalki doesn’t die, then it means it will just get stronger until it can match up to that teacher again.” Samantha thought.

This was why she had attempted to finish off the Dalki right away, always using her most powerful skill.

What was working was, for now, Fex was completely overpowering the two spiked Dalki with his b.a.r.e hands. Seeing this as an opportunity and not making the same mistake as last time, Samantha was going to help this time. The nine tails of earth grew behind the Dalki, and just when the Dalki could feel his energy rising to make a comeback, the nine tails had pierced it right in the back.

It hadn't gone through deep enough, but Fex, having seen the tails moments before, put all of his strength into punching faster and harder, hitting the body further into the tailed spikes until eventually, the Dalki stopped moving.

"We did it!" Samantha shouted.

At that moment, Fex's legs felt like jelly as the powering effects of his soul weapon and Dalki blood were over.

"Those things are so hard to kill." Fex said, gasping for air. While punching, he didn't take a breath, afraid that the Dalki would have attacked back if he did.

While the two of them were taking a short break after their victory, the sounds of screams could be heard, rumbling and buildings being destroyed. The fight was far from over, and they had only defeated a single Dalki.

"Can you still fight?" Fex asked.

"I'm completely drained of MC. I will need time to recover." Samantha replied, knowing that their best chances of defeating the rest would be with this strange strong teacher.

"Well, you saw what I could do once I stabbed myself with this needle, so will you let me stab you now, and let me control your body," Fex said

Although she was reluctant at first, she had no choice but to agree. Before leaving, Fex stabbed the dead Dalki with his needle once more, filling it up. The two of them then went to high ground on one of the few uncrushed buildings to have a look at the situation. Although Samantha was looking at where to go next in the Shelter instead, Fex was looking far off into the distance, far further than human eyes could see.

That's when he spotted that an army of Dalki were heading towards a group of students.

Quinn and the other teachers were staring at the trouble they were facing out in the desert as they could see the Dalki were marching through the sand towards them.

“If the Dalki gets past me, survive, survive long enough for me to come and help you!” Quinn shouted.

“If the Dalki gets past you? What are you talking about?” Innu asked.

In a split second, Quinn had left his position, and he was running straight ahead into the forty-five Dalki. While the students and teacher were to remain where they were.

“That person’s a dead man.” Innu could only think.

My Vampire System Chapter 1017 – A single warrior

Charging into a group of Dalki would be frightening for anyone. If someone had told Quinn in the past that he would be doing exactly that in the future, he would have never believed them. Yet here he was, charging straight towards a deadly enemy.

For some reason, his mind was completely clear; he knew what he needed to do and he wasn’t even shaking.

‘Is it because I know the lives of everyone behind me count on it? Or is it something else?’ Quinn wondered.

Looking at all of the Dalki in front of him, he used the inspect skill. It scanned the whole field and condensed it into information that was useful to him.

[Total number of Dalki: 45]

[Number of two spiked Dalki: 10]

[Number of one spiked Dalki: 35]

At first Quinn was surprised to see some two spiked Dalki among the group. Other than Borden, he had only fought against one spiked Dalki in the past. Even back then he was helpless against them. Yet now he wasn't just facing one, but many two spiked Dalki.

'I'm not the same as I was back then, things are a lot different now.' Quinn reassured himself and he was right.

His stats back then were nothing compared to what they are now. Before he was only a vampire but now he had evolved into a vampire lord, he also didn't have great equipment back then either. At the moment, although he didn't have a pair of good gauntlets, the rest of his equipment was still leaps and bounds ahead of the past. His blood skills, fighting skill, and everything about him was a different person.

"Is he planning to do that same kick as he did on Sach?" A teacher commented, watching Quinn bravely stand against the Dalki.

Even if Innu didn't like him, he had to admit that not many people could stand there as the humans' greatest threat in existence stood in front of them.

"If he is, I don't think it will do much against them."

Quinn wanted to damage the Dalki as much as he could before they would reach him. Moving the Qi to his back right leg, the power was rising inside. The red energy was being prepared and at the same time, the second stage of Qi was being produced as well.

"HUH!" Quinn shouted, as he lifted his leg off the ground so fast and shot out the blood crescent t.h.i.g.h kick infused with both stages of Qi. Unlike with the kick against Sach, this time the kick had the intention to kill.

Quinn had the intention to use as much power as he could gather while also using the blood crescent kick with it.

A loud bang was heard as if a gun had been shot out, and a giant line of red aura had left Quinn's leg. It moved so fast through the air with so much energy it looked like a red lightning strike.

[A significant amount of blood energy has been used]

[Minus -20 HP]

The blood crescent kick usually took 2 points of Hp compared to the blood swipes singular one, but without realising it, while having more control of his blood, Quinn was also able to pack more of his blood power into the attack.

Some of the Dalki attempted to dodge the attack while others knew it was hopeless and took on the strike head on, but for those that did, it was a big mistake. Their bodies were torn in half immediately, limbs separated from their bodies and some were heavily injured but still moving forwards.

[6/50 Dalki have been defeated]

Quinn's attack had only killed five of them, he could tell using his inspect skill so he could only assume that the other one had been killed inside of the shelter.

"That kick, what was that and that loud bang!" Swin said shocked.

"I don't think some of the Dalki are moving." A teacher spoke and they were right.

"You're telling me with a single kick, he managed to kill the Dalki just like that!" Innu grunted, as he also gulped, thanking his lucky stars he never tried to go further against this person.

"Wait, didn't you see that red aura attack, I think I've seen it somewhere before." Another said.

"Yeah, it looks like the same type of thing the Bloodevolver from power fighters produces." Erlen spoke, leaving his mouth wide open.

“The Bloodevolver, now that you mention it, those attacks do look the same.”

Before the Dalki had reached Quinn, his leg was temporarily out of commission and he was using the blood bank to heal it. The rebound from a strong attack had affected his leg slightly, and it was something Quinn hadn't expected since it was his first time using it. So instead, he was throwing out blood swipes as much as he could towards them, hurting them as much as possible.

“Yeah, it's exactly the same, so Quinn is the Bloodevolver from power fighters!”

Not everyone knew what the students were talking about, since the Bloodevolver's fame was short lived, still, it brought confusion to those that did know him. How did Quinn, the leader of the Cursed faction, have two abilities?

However, they soon didn't care and were just happy that he was on their side.

The clash between the Dalki and Quinn had started, as he lifted his leg kicking one right in the c.h.e.s.t pinning him to the ground, another threw out a fist towards him that was blocked by the shadow, and Quinn blasted him away with a blood spray filled Qi fist.

The students were seeing a single person knocking Dalki away one after another. Once in a while though a hit would go through hitting Quinn, but he wouldn't let it affect him and continued on. However, then they could see he was starting to get overwhelmed.

No longer could they see Quinn, but just a bunch of the Dalki around him.

[Blood hammer strike]

Two Dalki were chucked in the air, even if they couldn't see Quinn anymore they could see what he was doing and he was hanging on. Mainly thanks to the shadow and the new Muay Baron skills he had learnt. He had locked a Dalki down by the neck and shifted his body, causing the Dalki to hit their own, before kneeling it in the head away, and finishing it with a blood crescent kick.

However, even with Quinn doing so much damage to them, he had only done that, 'damage' Making them stronger and only a couple more had been killed.

[8/50 Dalki have been defeated]

Quinn then saw one of the Dalki, moving away towards the group of students and teachers, throwing his shadow path on the floor. He slowed down its movements and wanted to stop the Dalki, but another jumped in front of him before he could.

The teachers, and students were prepared, although at first they were impressed by what Quinn the Cursed faction leader had done, and they knew how strong he was, the Dalki would be coming towards them.

Going past Quinn, they started to head towards the teachers and students.

"Everyone, prepare yourselves, they will soon be upon us!" Innu shouted.

"No! If I let them pass me like this, the students they'll be killed. These Dalki are too strong, I can't defeat them slowly like this, I can't let them get past me!" Quinn screamed, and soon his arms started to go bloody.

Five of the Dalki had run past the ones that were huddled on Quinn. A smile appeared upon one's face as he continued to run towards the frightened humans. Then, he felt something hit the back of his legs causing him to fall over, several more cuts were made on his hands. The others felt something wrap around them as they were pulled back, and Quinn finished it off with a hammer strike right at the top of its head.

Leaping up in the air, standing in front of the Dalki, Quinn was now in front of them once again.

"I will not let you get past that easy." Quinn said.

"What is that?" Shiro and the others said, looking at Quinn.

Standing there , Quinn's arms were bloody as strange blades were sticking out along his forearms and long razor-like chains were dangling on the floor, dripping with blood.

Quinn had activated his Item type soul weapon, the Twin Tail chain.

My Vampire System Chapter 1018 – A bigger enemy

Although Quinn wasn't getting badly hurt and he could still fight on against the Dalki, there was another issue. He couldn't stop the Dalki that would ignore him and continue to charge on.

He needed a way to fight more of them at a once to defeat them quicker. There were quite a lot of Dalki still there and Quinn believed he had hurt them as much as he could using some of his blood skills, so he had no choice but to use his soul weapon, the twin tail chain.

The others watching could see it in sight for a second and it looked like Quinn was in considerable pain. His blood began dripping onto the floor as the blades could be seen piercing through his skin. The blades even seemed to move as if they were alive, constricting and tightening around his arms.

"What is that?" A teacher asked. "A beast weapon?"

"I have no idea, but based on it appearing out of nowhere, I can only assume it's a type of soul weapon." Innu guessed.

It wasn't long until they could see it in action, for Quinn had no choice but to start slaying his enemies as quickly as possible with the weapons. For every second he used the weapon his life would be drained, but after hitting the first set of Dalki from behind, Quinn realised something.

The blood of the Dalki that was consumed by the bladed weapons also empowered him. He had gained a boost in his stats more so than ever.

Swinging out the one of the twin tails, it lengthened and hammered down, hitting a few of the Dalki. Some attempted to grab on to stop it, but as Quinn pulled it like a ripcord, it shredded the Dalki's hands, causing some of them to lose their fingers and the top half of their hands.

[You have received a twenty percent power boost]

One of the Dalki that had been hit was a two spiked Dalki, which gave Quinn even more strength. Although the ten percent and twenty percent boost didn't seem to stack. Realising this, Quinn knew what he needed to do. He ran through, searching for what he needed and when he had found the two spiked Dalki, he would hit them slightly causing light scratches on their bodies. Green blood would splatter but they wouldn't be severely hurt.

'If I hurt these guys too much, they'll just get stronger.' Quinn thought. 'But they give me the strongest power boost, so with the extra power, I'll finish off the ones that are the weakest first!'

Jumping up in the air, Quinn spun his body like a tornado, spinning the twin blades around him. Any of the Dalki that got close would be cut apart and they were quick to learn their lesson. Now seeing them from up high in the sky, Quinn used his inspect skill.

Since it had levelled up, Quinn could tell which Dalki were fine and which were in a critical state. Some looked more injured but were actually better off than others. With this, Quinn was able to pick and choose the Dalki that he could finish off in a few hits. Coming down, he swung his blade as hard as he could, tearing off one of their arms from their shoulder.

When a Dalki attempted to punch him, his other twin tail retracted, making it smaller but more solid and the blades laid flat on its side, creating a type of shield taking the brunt of the attack. Kicking the Dalki away with his empowered attacks was enough, and he continued his plan of getting rid of as many of the one spiked Dalki as possible.

[13/50 Dalki defeated]

[14/50 Dalki defeated]

At the very back of the group, one of the Dalki who hadn't quite rushed in with the others seemed to be concerned by what he was seeing.

'The commander didn't come with us, he went to the shelter.' The Dalki thought.

"Be careful of the man with the strange weapons, continue charging forward!" The Dalki ordered at the back.

Hearing this, those that were the weakest had caught on to what Quinn was attempting to do. Due to them feeling stronger as they got weaker they were fearless, but the Dalki that spoke seemed to help them realise it wasn't working out.

However, when one Dalki attempted to avoid the strike of the twin blade, it had fallen on his shadow instead. After hitting the shadow, the Dalki still fell to the floor feeling a great pain in its head where it had landed on the shadow.

The other Dalki were stunned by this and they didn't know what to make of what had just happened. What were they feeling right now, they truly didn't know.

[16/50 Dalki defeated]

Still, with the Dalki's orders some of them were now ignoring Quinn and were attempting to run past him. Quinn, upon seeing these, went ahead to strike his twin tail on them, but was kicked in the side of his rib in the process, causing his twin tail to hit nothing but the sand.

Ignoring the kick, Quinn got up and wrapped the twin blade around the Dalki next to him and hurled him at the Dalki running away, before leaping forward in the air and blocking their path again.

For a second as Quinn had landed, he stumbled onto the ground and was now on one knee.

'This damned soul weapon, why does it hurt so much to use it, and they're digging into my arm even more!' Quinn thought.

Even though he was fine health wise and was stronger due to the Dalki's stats, the soul weapon hurt more than ever to use and he was unable to take a break, otherwise his weapons would eat him alive.

"He needs help!" Shiro shouted.

"Shiro's right, Quinn is out there fighting on his own, what are we doing just standing here? Look, he's hurt trying to protect us, are we just going to wait for him to die first?" Venus pointed over to Quinn.

Innu and the other teachers were still shell shocked witnessing what Quinn could do for the time. For a second they didn't even feel like they were in their own bodies, it was as if they were watching a movie of some kind. They never thought they would see anyone survive that long against the Dalki.

A single person was fighting against fifty Dalki, it was a tale that no one would believe unless they witnessed it and something that deserved to be passed down in history books forever.

Gritting his teeth, Quinn stood up on his feet again.

'If it was Arthur, he would have been able to deal with this many, he could have protected them all, right!' Quinn shouted in his head, which spurred him to continue swinging the twin blades as fast as he could at the oncoming enemies.

Another Dalki had run past him and as Quinn turned to stop him, the pain was too much and he had to pause for a short moment, but that was enough time for a two spiked Dalki to hit him breaking his ribs in the process, blood spewed from his mouth.

It was then that Quinn had a realisation for the first time that he was facing a different type of problem. It wasn't that Quinn was unable to defeat the fifty Dalki. If he had enough time and no one to protect, he had many ways and techniques that he could have used.

However, the problem now was that he was unable to protect others.

'Is this what Arthur felt like when he woke up to find all his people dead? What was the point of having all that power, if you can't protect the people you care for.' Quinn thought.

As Quinn was ready to get up and try to fight the Dalki again, he could see one had been sent flying past him. He was shocked to see it's body laying there on the floor.

[20/50 Dalki have been defeated]

Immediately after, abilities were seen firing off from behind, hitting the Dalki and sending some of them back, while others brushed off the attacks like they were nothing. The important thing wasn't that they were being injured, but that they were being kept busy.

"I'm sorry we waited too long, you did a lot better than I ever could have thought!" Innu said, standing by Quinn's side. "I don't care what happened between us in the past. Even if I think you're an asshole, right now there are even bigger assholes in front of us."

Smiling, Quinn couldn't agree more.

My Vampire System Chapter 1019

– A order powered by will

Away from all the fighting, standing on his own in the middle of the desert was the man known as Eno, but at the same time claimed not to be him. He was so far away from the battlefield that if a human was to look out to the desert, they wouldn't be able to see him. As for Eno though, when he looked at the battlefield, he could see everything that was going on in the distance. Everything he needed to see.

'The humans have decided to come and help you, but this will be where the real test happens, Quinn.' Eno thought. 'As for the shelter, with how many strong forces they sent, I'm surprised that it's still standing. It's a shame the other one is no longer there to send information.'

'Did they send this many people because he knew I was going to be here?' Eno thought.

'Maybe I should send the other one to the Shelter to help the others, if any of them are still alive.'

--

Out on the field, the students who had ranged abilities were firing off non stop. The ranged ability users were targeting the Dalki that were on the far edges and towards the back, while the stronger ones had formed units with the teachers to fight them toe to toe.

The teacher that seemed to be the most effective out of them all, was Peter. He had equipped his beast weapons known as the Tonfa that had been especially made for him. It was a strong baton-like object that would be placed under Peter's forearms and also stuck out a bit longer than his arms could reach.

With this, he was able to strike the Dalki at full force without having to worry about his own body taking damage. Even if he didn't feel pain, at times when using his full strength it would break his own limbs. This object had solved most of those problems and he was able to do more damage than before.

Shiro, who was fearless, had dived right in with the teachers even though he was asked to stay at the back. However, when he had reached a Dalki and was staring one down, he froze for a brief second. The Dalki swiped and Shiro attempted to dodge but through his movements he knew he would be too slow.

Before the hand could reach Shiro, Peter had slammed it down with his weapon to the ground and then put both of them together and hit the Dalki in the stomach like a baseball bat. Soon several ranged abilities were also hitting the Dalki in the head, causing it to stumble backwards.

"All students, do not engage!" Peter shouted. "They're faster, stronger, and will kill you in one strike!" Peter shouted.

With the help of everyone, the Dalki forces were quickly dropping.

However, this wasn't what Quinn wanted. Having used his soul weapon for too long he had no choice but to cancel the soul weapon. The pain was affecting his whole body and was making it hard for him to even move. Now he was left fighting using his shadow and his fists like before.

Quinn had quickly thrown out a blood swipe and caught it with his shadow creating the shadow scythe. Swinging it outward, he had hooked a Dalki by the neck and slammed it down into the ground.

Now that he had the second stage of Qi, if Quinn coated the red aura with it, it would last until the Qi vanished as well. This would give Quinn a permanent shadow scythe to use. He hadn't brought out two since he needed to use his other hand from time to time.

When the Dalki was pinned to the ground, that's when Quinn could see the chaos that was happening. A teacher had been slashed by a claw of a Dalki, and had split through the beast armour slicing them in half.

Another Dalki had jumped over the line of support, ignoring the teachers and was just hitting the students left and right. Each hit was devastating and it was clear the students wouldn't recover from the strikes. They all continued to blast and hit the Dalki, but the abilities did seemingly nothing.

'The students are too weak to even do any damage to them!' Quinn thought seeing this. 'As soon as we knew the Dalki were going to attack we should have sent them off somewhere.'

But where could Quinn send them? Even at the shelter the Dalki had landed.

'Eno, what the hell are you doing!' Quinn shouted with anger.

A group of students were currently on the floor, shaking and they had wet themselves making a puddle in front of them. Their teacher had just died trying to protect them and a Dalki covered in blood was looking at the three of them.

Most of the Dalki were still centred around Quinn, they knew he was the biggest threat. What was distracting him more than ever were the Dalki who were jumping into the centre of the students just to hurt people that stood no chance.

Continuing to try to protect the students around him, Quinn used the shadow lock skill whenever possible, putting them into a space where the Dalki couldn't get to. At the same time, Quinn also raised shadow domes over other students. Although this wouldn't do much in terms of helping him attack or get rid of the Dalki, it made some of them hesitant to move forward.

Each time Quinn would be distracted, he would be hit by the Dalki as he was not able to raise his shadow in time, and his health was getting lower and lower by the second. When it got to a certain point, Quinn went searching for a weak Dalki. Upon finding one, he made his hand in a claw-like shape, then performed the hammer strike.

This time, due to his hand being in a claw-like shape, his entire arm would go through the body. It was a move that wasn't focused on being an internal attack. Once he had their blood on his hands, Quinn would take it in, giving him another power boost and healing him slightly.

[29/50 Dalki defeated]

'Damn, I'm surrounded again!' Quinn noticed and was getting frustrated that there was a certain group of Dalki that wouldn't get off his back. To make matters worse, they were all two spikes as well. Their hits hurt and he couldn't slack while fighting them. Whenever he did to save a student, he would pay for it.

"Get out of my way!" Quinn shouted, swinging his scythe and stretching it out, he planned to hit all four of the ones that were constantly on him. Three jumped out of the way, while the last one took the hit. It had pierced his hands and they were bleeding, but at the last second while being skidded across the room, he let go jumping and Quinn could see his scythe heading straight for the student. He quickly had to get rid of his shadow, dropping the red aura from the end of it to avoid touching the student.

In seconds the other Dalki were upon him again.

"I can't do anything!"

Whenever Quinn attempted to fight the Dalki, even if he couldn't see the students the worst thing for him was that he could hear their cries.

"I just wanted to see my parents one more time before I go."

"Why did this happen to us, will someone stop them?"

“It hurts, it hurts so much.”

Gritting his teeth and blasting blood sprays of fists at the Dalki, Quinn was beyond frustrated.

“Attack me, fight me! Why do you have to go for them!” he screamed, punching his enemies in front of him, hoping they wouldn’t get back up, but they did.

Looking around, Quinn was trying to figure out an answer. The Dalki weren’t fighting this smart before so something had to have changed, and that’s when he noticed that a Dalki at the very back hadn’t gotten involved.

‘It’s him!’ Quinn thought, staring at him. ‘I have to kill him, I need to get to him!’

Quinn was punched but he blocked attacks with his shadow and continued to use Shadow lock on more students. However his MC points would soon run low if he continued to do that. It was a demanding skill, and blocking the strong attacks even with his newly acquired 1000 Mc points, were going down fast.

“That guy..he needs to die!” Quinn shouted at the top of his lungs, Quinn shouted covering up his head as two Dalki punched him at the same time.

‘Get rid of him!’ Quinn said almost as if it was an order.

At that moment, a black mist appeared from his body and started to float through the sky. It went over all those that were fighting and a black portal started to appear behind the two spiked Dalki who had yet to move.

From the portal. A large claw came out, striking the Dalki. At the last second they had spotted the creature but even lifting their hands, the claw shed through their strong skin. Jumping back quickly, the Dalki thought it was safe, but the Boneclaw appeared through a shadow behind it and stabbed it through its body with one of its hands before swiping with its other giant clawed hand, hitting its head. The claws went through easily and the head was no longer attached to the body falling to the floor.

“The boy still has the Boneclaw.” Eno said, surprised and still watching the fight from a distance. “I knew he had obtained it, but to still have it at this stage. In that case, maybe Quinn isn’t too innocent after all.” Eno said with a smile.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

If you find any errors (broken links, non-standard content, etc..), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

– A order powered by will

Away from all the fighting, standing on his own in the middle of the desert was the man known as Eno, but at the same time claimed not to be him. He was so far away from the battlefield that if a human was to look out to the desert, they wouldn’t be able to see him. As for Eno though, when he looked at the battlefield, he could see everything that was going on in the distance. Everything he needed to see.

‘The humans have decided to come and help you, but this will be where the real test happens, Quinn.’ Eno thought. ‘As for the shelter, with how many strong forces they sent, I’m surprised that it’s still standing. It’s a shame the other one is no longer there to send information.

‘Did they send this many people because he knew I was going to be here?’ Eno thought.

‘Maybe I should send the other one to the Shelter to help the others, if any of them are still alive.’

—

Out on the field, the students who had ranged abilities were firing off non stop. The ranged ability users were targeting the Dalki that were on the far edges and towards the back, while the stronger ones had formed units with the teachers to fight them toe to toe.

The teacher that seemed to be the most effective out of them all, was Peter. He had equipped his beast weapons known as the Tonfa that had been especially made for him. It was a strong baton-like object that would be placed under Peter's forearms and also stuck out a bit longer than his arms could reach.

With this, he was able to strike the Dalki at full force without having to worry about his own body taking damage. Even if he didn't feel pain, at times when using his full strength it would break his own limbs. This object had solved most of those problems and he was able to do more damage than before.

Shiro, who was fearless, had dived right in with the teachers even though he was asked to stay at the back. However, when he had reached a Dalki and was staring one down, he froze for a brief second. The Dalki swiped and Shiro attempted to dodge but through his movements he knew he would be too slow.

Before the hand could reach Shiro, Peter had slammed it down with his weapon to the ground and then put both of them together and hit the Dalki in the stomach like a baseball bat. Soon several ranged abilities were also hitting the Dalki in the head, causing it to stumble backwards.

"All students, do not engage!" Peter shouted. "They're faster, stronger, and will kill you in one strike!" Peter shouted.

With the help of everyone, the Dalki forces were quickly dropping.

However, this wasn't what Quinn wanted. Having used his soul weapon for too long he had no choice but to cancel the soul weapon. The pain was affecting his whole body and was making it hard for him to even move. Now he was left fighting using his shadow and his fists like before.

Quinn had quickly thrown out a blood swipe and caught it with his shadow creating the shadow scythe. Swinging it outward, he had hooked a Dalki by the neck and slammed it down into the ground.

Now that he had the second stage of Qi, if Quinn coated the red aura with it, it would last until the Qi vanished as well. This would give Quinn a permanent shadow scythe to use. He hadn't brought out two since he needed to use his other hand from time to time.

When the Dalki was pinned to the ground, that's when Quinn could see the chaos that was happening. A teacher had been slashed by a claw of a Dalki, and had split through the beast armour slicing them in half.

Another Dalki had jumped over the line of support, ignoring the teachers and was just hitting the students left and right. Each hit was devastating and it was clear the students wouldn't recover from the strikes. They all continued to blast and hit the Dalki, but the abilities did seemingly nothing.

'The students are too weak to even do any damage to them!' Quinn thought seeing this. 'As soon as we knew the Dalki were going to attack we should have sent them off somewhere.'

But where could Quinn send them? Even at the shelter the Dalki had landed.

'Eno, what the hell are you doing!' Quinn shouted with anger.

A group of students were currently on the floor, shaking and they had wet themselves making a puddle in front of them. Their teacher had just died trying to protect them and a Dalki covered in blood was looking at the three of them.

Most of the Dalki were still centred around Quinn, they knew he was the biggest threat. What was distracting him more than ever were the Dalki who were jumping into the centre of the students just to hurt people that stood no chance.

Continuing to try to protect the students around him, Quinn used the shadow lock skill whenever possible, putting them into a space where the Dalki couldn't get to. At the same time, Quinn also raised shadow domes over other students. Although this wouldn't do much in terms of helping him attack or get rid of the Dalki, it made some of them hesitant to move forward.

Each time Quinn would be distracted, he would be hit by the Dalki as he was not able to raise his shadow in time, and his health was getting lower and lower by the second. When it got to a certain

point, Quinn went searching for a weak Dalki. Upon finding one, he made his hand in a claw-like shape, then performed the hammer strike.

This time, due to his hand being in a claw-like shape, his entire arm would go through the body. It was a move that wasn't focused on being an internal attack. Once he had their blood on his hands, Quinn would take it in, giving him another power boost and healing him slightly.

[29/50 Dalki defeated]

'Damn, I'm surrounded again!' Quinn noticed and was getting frustrated that there was a certain group of Dalki that wouldn't get off his back. To make matters worse, they were all two spikes as well. Their hits hurt and he couldn't slack while fighting them. Whenever he did to save a student, he would pay for it.

"Get out of my way!" Quinn shouted, swinging his scythe and stretching it out, he planned to hit all four of the ones that were constantly on him. Three jumped out of the way, while the last one took the hit. It had pierced his hands and they were bleeding, but at the last second while being skidded across the room, he let go jumping and Quinn could see his scythe heading straight for the student. He quickly had to get rid of his shadow, dropping the red aura from the end of it to avoid touching the student.

In seconds the other Dalki were upon him again.

"I can't do anything!"

Whenever Quinn attempted to fight the Dalki, even if he couldn't see the students the worst thing for him was that he could hear their cries.

"I just wanted to see my parents one more time before I go."

"Why did this happen to us, will someone stop them?"

"It hurts, it hurts so much."

Gritting his teeth and blasting blood sprays of fists at the Dalki, Quinn was beyond frustrated.

“Attack me, fight me! Why do you have to go for them!” he screamed, punching his enemies in front of him, hoping they wouldn’t get back up, but they did.

Looking around, Quinn was trying to figure out an answer. The Dalki weren’t fighting this smart before so something had to have changed, and that’s when he noticed that a Dalki at the very back hadn’t gotten involved.

‘It’s him!’ Quinn thought, staring at him. ‘I have to kill him, I need to get to him!’

Quinn was punched but he blocked attacks with his shadow and continued to use Shadow lock on more students. However his MC points would soon run low if he continued to do that. It was a demanding skill, and blocking the strong attacks even with his newly acquired 1000 Mc points, were going down fast.

“That guy..he needs to die!” Quinn shouted at the top of his lungs, Quinn shouted covering up his head as two Dalki punched him at the same time.

‘Get rid of him!’ Quinn said almost as if it was an order.

At that moment, a black mist appeared from his body and started to float through the sky. It went over all those that were fighting and a black portal started to appear behind the two spiked Dalki who had yet to move.

From the portal. A large claw came out, striking the Dalki. At the last second they had spotted the creature but even lifting their hands, the claw shed through their strong skin. Jumping back quickly, the Dalki thought it was safe, but the Boneclaw appeared through a shadow behind it and stabbed it through its body with one of its hands before swiping with its other giant clawed hand, hitting its head. The claws went through easily and the head was no longer attached to the body falling to the floor.

“The boy still has the Boneclaw.” Eno said, surprised and still watching the fight from a distance. “I knew he had obtained it, but to still have it at this stage. In that case, maybe Quinn isn’t too innocent after all.” Eno said with a smile.

My Vampire System Chapter 1020

– Fex’s Secret (Part one)

While running through the destroyed shelter, Fex and Samantha realised that more destruction had been done than they first thought. There was hardly a structure that was still left standing in the area they were in. Even if one of the buildings hadn’t been directly hit, the shockwaves of fights and ability users all over had caused them to crumble.

The only thing that was still holding strong was the shelter walls that surrounded the whole place. This was due to part of them being built out of Glathrium. However, for a shelter as unimportant as this one, there wouldn’t be much put into the walls.

While running through the destruction, Fex could suddenly hear someone shouting for help, the voice was weak and faint. He quickly changed direction from where he and Samantha were heading and headed to where the noise was coming from.

“There’s someone under this rubble!” Fex said.

‘How did he hear that? We were so far away and there was so much noise around us.’ Samantha thought, but carried on helping Fex. She was going to use her ability to move some of the rubble, but before she could, using his b.a.r.e hands, Fex had moved the rubble until he had eventually found a mother and a young boy.

‘I almost forgot that this boy had strength to match the Dalki, there’s also the string ability he used, his strong red aura along with that soul weapon of his. This teacher, he’s from the Cursed faction, right? Why is everyone from that faction so... strange.’

Fex didn’t know the way to the emergency centre but lifted them with ease and went to Samantha who was deep in her thoughts.

“Tell me where I should take them.” Fex said in a rush.

“Oh, follow me.” Samantha led the way. Even if Fex was strange, at least he seemed like he wasn’t a bad person.

When arriving at the emergency centre, Samantha noticed that there were a couple of Mechs there standing guard next to a giant trap door that led underground, and there were a few men in military uniform dotted around.

“Head General Samantha!” The general said after one of them went to guide the injured into the emergency centre. “We couldn’t locate you so we thought something happened, I’m glad you’re...” Before finishing his sentence, the military man noticed that General Samantha wasn’t okay at all, she was out of breath and sweating with torn clothes.

If they didn’t find her straight away, it could only mean she was dealing with a Dalki of her own and now the soldier was reluctant to tell her, but continued anyway. It was his duty.

“Report, the Mech’s along with sergeant Mark of the shelter have been able to defeat one of the invading Dalki. They are currently moving onto the next. However, there is an issue. A two spiked Dalki has destroyed all the forces we have sent out to it.

“We haven’t been able to get in contact with Mark since he went off, we are hoping for some orders based on the situation. For now, we have guarded the two emergency centres.” The soldiers said.

Guarding the centres was good and a bad thing at the same time, Samantha thought. In a way it was telling the enemy that all the humans were hiding in this place, but if they didn’t defeat the Dalki, how long could the humans survive in the shelters without the teleporters being turned on?

Because of this, Samantha took charge and made the decisions.

“You guys, come with us and we will head off to face the two spiked Dalki.”

When she said these words, she could see the worried look on the soldiers faces.

“But Ma’am, are you able to fight? I know you are strong, but against a two spiked Dalki you will need to be in top shape.”

For a second, Samantha looked at Fex.

“We can both fight,” she said. “We just need you for support.”

Soon, the group of them were off. Two mechs, five soldiers, Fex, and Samantha were heading to deal with the two spiked Dalki. While two remained to help any more injured that would arrive.

While running ahead, Samantha had many questions on her mind.

“When you stabbed yourself with that black needle, you got stronger and you said the same thing would happen to me, right? Then will it give me a little boost with my MC cells?”

Samantha had recovered some of her cells, but not all and she was afraid of just how long she could fight for.

Fex looked at the needle in his hand with the green liquid. He was sure the green liquid would do nothing to empower her, so it was best he injected the liquid with the needle in himself first and then used the needle to control Samantha.

There was one big problem however, even if the needle did give her additional MC points to use, Fex couldn’t make much use of her. The main reason for this was because having the needle in the human also made it so he could control that person from a single point.

However, controlling Samantha wouldn’t do much at all. Since she wasn’t a physical fighter and was one who relied on elemental powers. Fex couldn’t control how one could use their elemental powers but only their body.

This was why he preferred hand to hand combat, or weapon fighters like Erin and Dennis.

“The Dalki, you were trying to kill it in one shot right?” Fex replied. “When I stab this needle in you, you will be on your own. You will have enough energy to use your nine tail trick one more time. At that point, you need to do what you can to kill it.” Fex said.

It didn't take long for them to find out where the two spiked Dalki was, as the ground started to rumble as it caused meaningless destruction. It had punched a partial building causing it to completely collapse. It also hadn't moved too far from the crater of the black pod that it had landed in.

Fex went ahead of the others and the first thing he did was stab himself with the green needle. The green blood effect would last a while but the power of the needle would only last while it was in one's body, so he couldn't have both effects of it while using it on Samantha.

“Fire shots only when you think they are necessary, try to injure it as little as possible!” Fex shouted.

The soldiers and the two mechs looked at each other.

“Listen to him, he will be in charge of this fight.” Samantha said.

No questions asked, if Samntha ordered it they would follow this stranger to them.

“So I'm really going to be doing this again.” Fex said, walking forward and looking at the giant Dalki that had lifted both its arms in the air and slammed it into the ground.

Fex had moved out of the way and placed red pieces of string on the ground, there was the perfect chance to hit it but he didn't and the others in the mech and soldiers were itching to fire.

“Don't, trust him!” Samantha said, seeing they were about to attack.

Fex then climbed on its back, passing red string over the back of its body and attempted to go through the gap between its shoulders and arms. However, he wasn't quick enough as his legs had been grabbed and he was slammed to the ground.

The Dalki was then ready to stomp on Fex, but the ability users and Mechs fired first, hitting the Dalki. Even if it didn't pierce its skin or hurt the Dalki much, it did give a split second so that Fex could move out of the way.

The others seeing this were surprised. A human had just been slammed into the ground by a two spiked Dalki and was fine. Taking the flask out on him, Fex drank a bit of the blood he still had left. He had injuries and he needed blood to heal them.

"Why is he taking a drink during his fight?" A soldier asked. When the Dalki prepared to kick Fex, he managed to dodge this time, moving to the side and getting closer. When he reached its body he slid underneath the Dalki.

'The big guys are fast and strong, but with the power of the needle I'm just as strong!' Fex thought, finally his preparations had been made, to take down the Dalki.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

∴ .

– Fex's Secret (Part one)

While running through the destroyed shelter, Fex and Samantha realised that more destruction had been done than they first thought. There was hardly a structure that was still left standing in the area they were in. Even if one of the buildings hadn't been directly hit, the shockwaves of fights and ability users all over had caused them to crumble.

The only thing that was still holding strong was the shelter walls that surrounded the whole place. This was due to part of them being built out of Glathrium. However, for a shelter as unimportant as this one, there wouldn't be much put into the walls.

While running through the destruction, Fex could suddenly hear someone shouting for help, the voice was weak and faint. He quickly changed direction from where he and Samantha were heading and headed to where the noise was coming from.

“There’s someone under this rubble!” Fex said.

‘How did he hear that? We were so far away and there was so much noise around us.’ Samantha thought, but carried on helping Fex. She was going to use her ability to move some of the rubble, but before she could, using his b.a.r.e hands, Fex had moved the rubble until he had eventually found a mother and a young boy.

‘I almost forgot that this boy had strength to match the Dalki, there’s also the string ability he used, his strong red aura along with that soul weapon of his. This teacher, he’s from the Cursed faction, right? Why is everyone from that faction so... strange.’

Fex didn’t know the way to the emergency centre but lifted them with ease and went to Samantha who was deep in her thoughts.

“Tell me where I should take them.” Fex said in a rush.

“Oh, follow me.” Samantha led the way. Even if Fex was strange, at least he seemed like he wasn’t a bad person.

When arriving at the emergency centre, Samantha noticed that there were a couple of Mechs there standing guard next to a giant trap door that led underground, and there were a few men in military uniform dotted around.

“Head General Samantha!” The general said after one of them went to guide the injured into the emergency centre. “We couldn’t locate you so we thought something happened, I’m glad you’re...” Before finishing his sentence, the military man noticed that General Samantha wasn’t okay at all, she was out of breath and sweating with torn clothes.

If they didn’t find her straight away, it could only mean she was dealing with a Dalki of her own and now the soldier was reluctant to tell her, but continued anyway. It was his duty.

“Report, the Mech’s along with sergeant Mark of the shelter have been able to defeat one of the invading Dalki. They are currently moving onto the next. However, there is an issue. A two spiked Dalki has destroyed all the forces we have sent out to it.

“We haven’t been able to get in contact with Mark since he went off, we are hoping for some orders based on the situation. For now, we have guarded the two emergency centres.” The soldiers said.

Guarding the centres was good and a bad thing at the same time, Samantha thought. In a way it was telling the enemy that all the humans were hiding in this place, but if they didn’t defeat the Dalki, how long could the humans survive in the shelters without the teleporters being turned on?

Because of this, Samantha took charge and made the decisions.

“You guys, come with us and we will head off to face the two spiked Dalki.”

When she said these words, she could see the worried look on the soldiers faces.

“But Ma’am, are you able to fight? I know you are strong, but against a two spiked Dalki you will need to be in top shape.”

For a second, Samantha looked at Fex.

“We can both fight,” she said. “We just need you for support.”

Soon, the group of them were off. Two mechs, five soldiers, Fex, and Samantha were heading to deal with the two spiked Dalki. While two remained to help any more injured that would arrive.

While running ahead, Samantha had many questions on her mind.

“When you stabbed yourself with that black needle, you got stronger and you said the same thing would happen to me, right? Then will it give me a little boost with my MC cells?”

Samantha had recovered some of her cells, but not all and she was afraid of just how long she could fight for.

Fex looked at the needle in his hand with the green liquid. He was sure the green liquid would do nothing to empower her, so it was best he injected the liquid with the needle in himself first and then used the needle to control Samantha.

There was one big problem however, even if the needle did give her additional MC points to use, Fex couldn't make much use of her. The main reason for this was because having the needle in the human also made it so he could control that person from a single point.

However, controlling Samantha wouldn't do much at all. Since she wasn't a physical fighter and was one who relied on elemental powers. Fex couldn't control how one could use their elemental powers but only their body.

This was why he preferred hand to hand combat, or weapon fighters like Erin and Dennis.

"The Dalki, you were trying to kill it in one shot right?" Fex replied. "When I stab this needle in you, you will be on your own. You will have enough energy to use your nine tail trick one more time. At that point, you need to do what you can to kill it." Fex said.

It didn't take long for them to find out where the two spiked Dalki was, as the ground started to rumble as it caused meaningless destruction. It had punched a partial building causing it to completely collapse. It also hadn't moved too far from the crater of the black pod that it had landed in.

Fex went ahead of the others and the first thing he did was stab himself with the green needle. The green blood effect would last a while but the power of the needle would only last while it was in one's body, so he couldn't have both effects of it while using it on Samantha.

"Fire shots only when you think they are necessary, try to injure it as little as possible!" Fex shouted.

The soldiers and the two mechs looked at each other.

“Listen to him, he will be in charge of this fight.” Samantha said.

No questions asked, if Samantha ordered it they would follow this stranger to them.

“So I’m really going to be doing this again.” Fex said, walking forward and looking at the giant Dalki that had lifted both its arms in the air and slammed it into the ground.

Fex had moved out of the way and placed red pieces of string on the ground, there was the perfect chance to hit it but he didn’t and the others in the mech and soldiers were itching to fire.

“Don’t, trust him!” Samantha said, seeing they were about to attack.

Fex then climbed on its back, passing red string over the back of its body and attempted to go through the gap between its shoulders and arms. However, he wasn’t quick enough as his legs had been grabbed and he was slammed to the ground.

The Dalki was then ready to stomp on Fex, but the ability users and Mechs fired first, hitting the Dalki. Even if it didn’t pierce its skin or hurt the Dalki much, it did give a split second so that Fex could move out of the way.

The others seeing this were surprised. A human had just been slammed into the ground by a two spiked Dalki and was fine. Taking the flask out on him, Fex drank a bit of the blood he still had left. He had injuries and he needed blood to heal them.

“Why is he taking a drink during his fight?” A soldier asked. When the Dalki prepared to kick Fex, he managed to dodge this time, moving to the side and getting closer. When he reached its body he slid underneath the Dalki.

‘The big guys are fast and strong, but with the power of the needle I’m just as strong!’ Fex thought, finally his preparations had been made, to take down the Dalki.

My Vampire System Chapter 1021

– Fex’s Secret (Part two)

Everything Fex had been doing so far was for this moment. Red strings came from his fingers, and at the same time, red strings formed all over the Dalki. On the floor, the string also rose as he controlled it with his blood. So much red string had been created while Fex was busy avoiding its attacks and had tied up the Dalki in crucial places.

Now taking the needle out of himself, he chucked it towards Samantha. She knew what she needed to do and ran forward, allowing the needle to stab her in the back.

The soldiers were confused by this, but as she spun around and clapped her hands she commanded.

“Get ready to attack!” The nine tails with her soul weapon the hardened tips rose. Fex now no longer having the needle in him was finding it hard to hold the Dalki in place but he just needed to for a few more moments.

His muscles felt like they were tearing apart and his whole body was shaking trying to hold the Dalki in place. The nine tails had struck all towards the head, stabbing into the Dalki. The sheer power from the elemental users and also the Mechs continued to fire in as they charged forward.

No one had stopped attacking, but Fex felt his arms give out and the string was released, the Dalki wasn’t dead yet. In fact, it was getting stronger as it was getting weaker.

“Arghh! Screw you.” Fex said, leaping up into the air. Using his blood ornament to cover his hand, it was covered in a red aura and with all his might he had jumped into the line of fire, getting hit by the mech and a few elemental shots from behind. Squinting and grunting, fortunately he still managed to deliver his punch right to the Dalki’s head.

He cried in pain, tumbling to the ground with his back wounded and fell to the floor, where he just laid there.

At the same time, the Dalki too had fallen to the floor and had been defeated. Samantha, upon seeing this, immediately ran to where Fex was. His wounds were bad and she could see his back had been quite hurt from the mech's beast laser shots.

"Damn it, I'll get help, I'll call a healer!" Samantha shouted.

"It's okay." Fex grunted.

"It's not okay, come on, don't die. You need to live, I don't even know your name."

Fex smiled.

"It's Fex." And pointed to his flask that had skidded away from him.

She looked at what he was pointing at and dashed over to reach it thinking it was something important. When she picked it up the lid was open and she could see that blood had fallen from the flask.

'It was blood inside that flask? Why would he be drinking blood?'

Nonetheless, she brought the flask back over to Fex, who attempted to pour it into his mouth. With only a few drops coming out he needed more.

For some reason, he had attempted to drink the blood and she didn't understand what was going on. However, seconds later and a loud crash was heard. She turned her head and seemingly out of nowhere another two spiked Dalki had arrived and smashed one of the Mech's with a single hand.

The soldiers attempted to attack it but were killed in an instant and the other mech was picked up and lifted into the air before being smashed into the ground. The mech was punching back, trying to fight, but it was clear there was an easy winner that would be decided between the two of them soon.

What was noticeable about this Dalki, was the fact that it had green blood all over its body. This meant that it had been in a fight before, and whoever had fought it had managed to injure it greatly.

If it was a beast this would be good news, but not for a Dalki who got stronger based on these types of things.

“No, crap! What should I do?” Samantha asked, slamming the ground out of anger for how weak she was at the moment. She had counted that there were five pods and this was quite possibly the last of the Dalki in the shelter, but she couldn’t do anything.

Her MC cells had been spent and when Fex was injured, the soul weapon had disappeared.

“Blood....” Fex called out, as he looked from the corner of his eyes and could see the Dalki heading towards them.

“Blood, what are you talking about at a time like this?” Samantha shouted. She was wondering if she should try to flee on her own or grab Fex and flee with him, but it would be impossible to outrun a Dalki.

“If you give me blood, I can fight again!” Fex shouted. Although Fex had to hide his ability as a vampire, at the moment, he knew that both of their lives were at stake. He knew he was the only one that could save them.

‘This boy, he keeps saying crazy things, but he did drink that flask in the middle of the fight, so maybe he’s telling the truth!’ She had to gamble, and that’s exactly what she did. She quickly formed a sharp dagger with her earth ability, cutting the palm of her hand.

“This is what you need right, this will let you fight. Then please help us!” She shouted at Fex, allowing the blood to fall from the palm of her hand and drip into Fex’s mouth.

Almost instantly as the blood entered Fex’s mouth, his wounds on his back healed at a fast rate.

“Just what is going on, it actually worked?”

However, there was no time for celebrations or explanations as the Mech that was fighting with the Dalki had finally stopped moving, and now the Dalki’s attention was only on the two of them.

“Was it you two?” The Dalki asked. “Were you two the ones that killed the others!” The Dalki shouted.

At that moment, Fex managed to stand up. Although his wounds had healed, it was a different story about everything else. He was completely drained after having two tough fights in a row, and he wasn't even sure he could produce string anymore.

The Dalki screamed loudly, making a roar similar to a dragon. The gust of wind was felt from his roar and was so strong that it knocked Fex and Samantha over.

Attempting to do the same, Fex took a deep breath in, and shouted back.

“Roarrhh!” Fex screamed at the top of his lungs. When he did so, he wasn't the only one that had screamed. He was confused and thought he was going delusional with tiredness, but Samantha had heard it too.

“Fex, you can rest now. Don't worry, leave it to us.” A voice said from behind but it wasn't just one person, it was five of them.

“You guys, you're here, how did you make it here?” Fex said, as his eyes were slowly fading. Just as he fell, Linda managed to catch him and slowly put him on the ground.

“Do you mind looking after this idiot for a while?” Linda said with a smile, putting her next to Samantha. “I think we have something else to deal with.”

Seeing these people, Linda wondered who they were. From the way they were speaking they clearly knew who Fex was. Which had given her a hint.

“Wait, are you from the Cursed faction?” Samantha asked.

Nate gave a thumbs up without turning his head, thinking that he looked cool and it would impress the pretty head general.

Members from the Cursed faction had arrived, and it wasn't just any members, but some of the strongest from the Cursed faction.

"Be careful, it's at its strongest at the moment." Samantha warned, but it seemed like her warning had no effect on them whatsoever as each of them stood there confidently, ready to take on the Dalki.

'The Cursed faction...Fex, just who are you guys?' Samantha thought as she looked down at Fex's tired face.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

∴ .

– Fex's Secret (Part two)

Everything Fex had been doing so far was for this moment. Red strings came from his fingers, and at the same time, red strings formed all over the Dalki. On the floor, the string also rose as he controlled it with his blood. So much red string had been created while Fex was busy avoiding its attacks and had tied up the Dalki in crucial places.

Now taking the needle out of himself, he chucked it towards Samantha. She knew what she needed to do and ran forward, allowing the needle to stab her in the back.

The soldiers were confused by this, but as she spun around and clapped her hands she commanded.

"Get ready to attack!" The nine tails with her soul weapon the hardened tips rose. Fex now no longer having the needle in him was finding it hard to hold the Dalki in place but he just needed to for a few more moments.

His muscles felt like they were tearing apart and his whole body was shaking trying to hold the Dalki in place. The nine tails had struck all towards the head, stabbing into the Dalki. The sheer power from the elemental users and also the Mechs continued to fire in as they charged forward.

No one had stopped attacking, but Fex felt his arms give out and the string was released, the Dalki wasn't dead yet. In fact, it was getting stronger as it was getting weaker.

"Arghh! Screw you." Fex said, leaping up into the air. Using his blood ornament to cover his hand, it was covered in a red aura and with all his might he had jumped into the line of fire, getting hit by the mech and a few elemental shots from behind. Squinting and grunting, fortunately he still managed to deliver his punch right to the Dalki's head.

He cried in pain, tumbling to the ground with his back wounded and fell to the floor, where he just laid there.

At the same time, the Dalki too had fallen to the floor and had been defeated. Samantha, upon seeing this, immediately ran to where Fex was. His wounds were bad and she could see his back had been quite hurt from the mech's beast laser shots.

"Damn it, I'll get help, I'll call a healer!" Samantha shouted.

"It's okay." Fex grunted.

"It's not okay, come on, don't die. You need to live, I don't even know your name."

Fex smiled.

"It's Fex." And pointed to his flask that had skidded away from him.

She looked at what he was pointing at and dashed over to reach it thinking it was something important. When she picked it up the lid was open and she could see that blood had fallen from the flask.

'It was blood inside that flask? Why would he be drinking blood?'

Nonetheless, she brought the flask back over to Fex, who attempted to pour it into his mouth. With only a few drops coming out he needed more.

For some reason, he had attempted to drink the blood and she didn't understand what was going on. However, seconds later and a loud crash was heard. She turned her head and seemingly out of nowhere another two spiked Dalki had arrived and smashed one of the Mech's with a single hand.

The soldiers attempted to attack it but were killed in an instant and the other mech was picked up and lifted into the air before being smashed into the ground. The mech was punching back, trying to fight, but it was clear there was an easy winner that would be decided between the two of them soon.

What was noticeable about this Dalki, was the fact that it had green blood all over its body. This meant that it had been in a fight before, and whoever had fought it had managed to injure it greatly.

If it was a beast this would be good news, but not for a Dalki who got stronger based on these types of things.

"No, crap! What should I do?" Samantha asked, slamming the ground out of anger for how weak she was at the moment. She had counted that there were five pods and this was quite possibly the last of the Dalki in the shelter, but she couldn't do anything.

Her MC cells had been spent and when Fex was injured, the soul weapon had disappeared.

"Blood...." Fex called out, as he looked from the corner of his eyes and could see the Dalki heading towards them.

"Blood, what are you talking about at a time like this?" Samantha shouted. She was wondering if she should try to flee on her own or grab Fex and flee with him, but it would be impossible to outrun a Dalki.

“If you give me blood, I can fight again!” Fex shouted. Although Fex had to hide his ability as a vampire, at the moment, he knew that both of their lives were at stake. He knew he was the only one that could save them.

“This boy, he keeps saying crazy things, but he did drink that flask in the middle of the fight, so maybe he’s telling the truth!” She had to gamble, and that’s exactly what she did. She quickly formed a sharp dagger with her earth ability, cutting the palm of her hand.

“This is what you need right, this will let you fight. Then please help us!” She shouted at Fex, allowing the blood to fall from the palm of her hand and drip into Fex’s mouth.

Almost instantly as the blood entered Fex’s mouth, his wounds on his back healed at a fast rate.

“Just what is going on, it actually worked?”

However, there was no time for celebrations or explanations as the Mech that was fighting with the Dalki had finally stopped moving, and now the Dalki’s attention was only on the two of them.

“Was it you two?” The Dalki asked. “Were you two the ones that killed the others!” The Dalki shouted.

At that moment, Fex managed to stand up. Although his wounds had healed, it was a different story about everything else. He was completely drained after having two tough fights in a row, and he wasn’t even sure he could produce string anymore.

The Dalki screamed loudly, making a roar similar to a dragon. The gust of wind was felt from his roar and was so strong that it knocked Fex and Samantha over.

Attempting to do the same, Fex took a deep breath in, and shouted back.

“Roarrhh!” Fex screamed at the top of his lungs. When he did so, he wasn’t the only one that had screamed. He was confused and thought he was going delusional with tiredness, but Samantha had heard it too.

“Fex, you can rest now. Don’t worry, leave it to us.” A voice said from behind but it wasn’t just one person, it was five of them.

“You guys, you’re here, how did you make it here?” Fex said, as his eyes were slowly fading. Just as he fell, Linda managed to catch him and slowly put him on the ground.

“Do you mind looking after this idiot for a while?” Linda said with a smile, putting her next to Samantha. “I think we have something else to deal with.”

Seeing these people, Linda wondered who they were. From the way they were speaking they clearly knew who Fex was. Which had given her a hint.

“Wait, are you from the Cursed faction?” Samantha asked.

Nate gave a thumbs up without turning his head, thinking that he looked cool and it would impress the pretty head general.

Members from the Cursed faction had arrived, and it wasn’t just any members, but some of the strongest from the Cursed faction.

“Be careful, it’s at its strongest at the moment.” Samantha warned, but it seemed like her warning had no effect on them whatsoever as each of them stood there confidently, ready to take on the Dalki.

‘The Cursed faction...Fex, just who are you guys?’ Samantha thought as she looked down at Fex’s tired face.

My Vampire System Chapter 1022 – Cursed teamwork

On the Cursed ship, when Brock had revealed to the group that Quinn would be talking to Eno right now, they didn’t take that as a good sign. Instead, Logan and Sam were thinking along the same lines.

They were worried. Richard Eno wasn't someone they could fully trust yet despite what Logan's parents told him, or believe that he was the great scientist that helped out the human race in times of need. There were just too many secrets for things to go smoothly.

After learning of this, Sam suggested that they keep a close eye on Quinn and find out where he was. They knew the schedule of the military and what planet they would be on, and because they had an inkling that Eno would try something, they were ready having organised a few things beforehand.

Of course, as soon as the communication devices were down and the military had put out a report for anyone in the nearby area to be careful of the Planet Caladi, they were already one step ahead of everyone else.

This allowed them to arrive before anyone. Linda, Nate, Dennis, Wevil and Sam had teleported to the planet closest and already had a ship prepared to head to planet Caladi.

"Remember the plan!" Sam said, and at that moment, the Dalki came rushing forward. Wevil, Sam, Nate, and Dennis stood in front of Linda and each one of them raised their shadow. They used their abilities to equally take part of the attack.

Alone, their MC points were probably enough to just block a single attack from a Dalki, but then they wouldn't be able to fight using their ability anymore. However if they mixed their shadows together, they would contribute evenly to the attack and it wouldn't drain them so quickly.

'The shadow ability, isn't that Quinn, their Cursed faction Leader's ability? Does this mean that he taught it to others in his faction as well?' Samantha wondered. In a way, one wouldn't think this was too surprising – it was a strong ability that should be shared. However with such a strong ability, some people might have decided to keep the power only to themselves.

However, with the shadow ability alone, this couldn't be the only reason why they were confident.

Samantha had noticed that Linda didn't use a shadow ability, but instead started to grow in size while being surrounded by shadows. As she began growing slightly larger than the Dalki, her beast armour was being equipped through the shadow equip skill.

Then when she was ready, the others quickly moved out of the way and the Dalki and Linda clashed. Their hands netted closely together, pushing against one another hoping for one to give in.

For the second time today, Samantha had seen another human match a Dalki in terms of strength.

'Do the Cursed faction have a lot better beast gear than we thought?' She wondered, and she soon started to move Fex and herself away from the danger zone.

"Everyone quickly, get to it!" Sam ordered and Wevil's body started to transform into the dangerous bug man he was, turning into his tiger beetle form.

At the same time, Dennis had moved his shadow to form small wings on his back. Sam, using his own shadow, had somehow allowed it to also attach to Dennis, letting his wings grow bigger.

Dennis hopped onto Nate's broad shoulders and soon added his shadow too, making it so Dennis had formed his own pair of shadow wings. Using his strong t.h.i.g.hs, Nate crouched down before jumping up and pushing up Dennis into the sky.

He flapped his wings giving him extra air time and speed, and then he stayed still for just a second as he looked down at the Dalki.

"I never thought I would ever be able to fly again after losing my ability, it's not quite the same but this will have to do." Dennis said as he started to descend, spinning his whole body. At the same time he activated his soul weapon, creating a golden aura around him.

Soon, Nate and Wevil launched forward to the Dalki, attacking its legs as hard as they could. Nate had formed a blood punch of destruction and Wevil now transformed into his tiger beetle-like form, he charged forward and with his strong claws smashed into the other leg.

The Dalki tumbled to the ground and Linda at that moment quickly let go of the Dalki's hands to give it an uppercut, hitting its head upwards. At just the right time Dennis used his soul weapon and at high speed he came spinning down, slamming onto the Dalki's head and crushing it within its own body. The sand on top of the hard ground blew out and Samantha had to cover her eyes before she was hit by the aftershock.

'Is he okay?' She thought, for one to land with such force it was almost a suicidal attack.

The wings on his back had spread out onto the ground creating a soft landing for Dennis so he wouldn't be hurt further from the initial impact. The five that had arrived seemed perfectly fine after their turbulent entrance and the Dalki was no longer moving.

'Did they just manage to kill a two spiked Dalki that was on the verge of death?' Samantha thought, as she saw them walking towards her.

She could see that Dennis also seemed uninjured after her initial worry about the impact of his attack. In the last war they had mainly only fought against one spiked Dalki. Two spiked were a very rare occurrence and three spiked were the highest that anyone had ever encountered.

Even back then it would take a great force to kill a Dalki. Some even thought it was just because of the humans' sheer numbers that they were able to somewhat win the first war, but the human race's numbers had greatly dwindled after that.

If the Dalki actually had stronger forces than that then the humans would have no hope, which was why the military were being so strict on gathering tools to defeat the Dalki as well as training the students.

'How powerful is the Cursed faction for only five of them to defeat a Dalki without getting hurt? And if they have the shadow ability, how are they able to do things that would require an ability? It seems like we hardly know anything about them. I don't even recognise any of the people here and the same goes for teacher Fex back there.'

"If you don't mind, I think we'll take him." Sam said with a smile as Linda lifted Fex and hurled him into her back.

"I think you should head to the others, and it looks like your own commander has arrived." Sam said, pointing to the sky.

Looking up, one of the Bertha sh.i.p.s that was operated by the military could be seen entering the planet's atmosphere with several smaller faster sh.i.p.s around it.

At that moment she realised that the shelter probably wasn't the only place that was attacked, there were the students out on the expedition.

'What if five or more Dalki came to where they were, I have to get in contact with them.'

"You guys, you need to make sure the students are okay, the Cursed faction-" Samantha was trying to explain, but Sam just placed his hand on her worried shoulder.

"Don't worry. The fight is over, we can tell." Sam said, and he wasn't wrong either.

With the connection they each felt with Quinn, they could feel when he was fighting close by, but they could also tell there was something else going on, but what could it be?

--

Standing out on the sandy desert, Quinn was surrounded by several bodies of Dalki he had defeated, the Boneclaw that had come out to help had done half the job for him and soon disappeared right back to where Quinn was.

But as Quinn stood out ahead of them and looked around, he could see the students and teachers who had been injured and killed. Many lives had been lost in this battle.

'This isn't the victory I wanted.' Quinn thought.

[Quest has been completed]

[50/50 Dalki have been defeated]

[Rewards will now be given]

My Vampire System Chapter 1023 – Sacrifice continues

A few moments before the fight with the Dalki had ended, Quinn had successfully summoned the Boneclaw out. Vincent, who was watching everything in the system, was unsure if even Quinn knew what he was doing or not, as he had just given a command from his darkest will and the Boneclaw had answered coming out to his call.

With the Boneclaw out, it dealt with the Dalki giving orders at the back relatively easily. The Boneclaw had it's full strength compared to what it was in the past and it was able to attack the Dalki army from behind, giving less pressure on Quinn.

Still, Quinn was worried about those around that were still getting attacked while fighting the Dalki. He raised his hand and used shadow lock again, protecting a bunch of students, but he had nowhere near enough MC cells to protect them all and the Dalki were taking advantage of these openings. Getting hit each time his focus strayed.

"Quinn, you need to listen to me. You can't save them all, some of them have already died and that's a fact!" Vincent said. "What you need to do now is focus on defeating the Dalki as quickly as possible. This is the best way for you to save the most amount of lives."

Quinn didn't want to admit that he wasn't strong enough to protect everyone, but he knew Vincent was right. He knew a change of strategy was needed.

There were still four Dalki that had surrounded Quinn and he was away from where all the teachers and students were fighting. Quickly, he placed a large shadow dome over the four of them.

Using the shadow hop, Quinn was able to sneak around the dome and hit them with blood crescent kicks and more, even raining down on one of them as he dropped from above blood swipes. Before landing, spinning his body he hit the side of a Dalki's head with his elbow, a fatal blow for the Dalki after all the punishment it had already received.

Throughout the whole fight, Quinn had been pacing himself so he could fight against the fifty Dalki, but now he had another goal – to defeat them as quickly as possible. The Dalki had hard skin, especially

where their scales stuck out more such as their forearms, c.h.e.s.t, and head. These were the attacking parts of the Dalki and the more critical places that needed more protection.

Firing off a blood bullet from his fingers and hitting the forehead of a Dalki, Quinn realised it wasn't enough to defeat another, but firing off five of them at the same place and then charging in, Quinn was ready with a hammer strike towards the head, weakening the scales and defeating yet another Dalki.

At this point, the other two that remained inside started to punch the walls of shadow around them hoping to get away. Quinn knew this because with each strike his MC points would be depleted and too busy dealing with the Dalki that was nearly defeated, his MC points had finally hit 0. The dome was collapsing but Quinn wasn't relying on just the shadow anymore, he had his Muay baron skills, and his different stages of Qi with blood skills.

Finally, after defeating the last two Dalki, Quinn stood there with several dead Dalki lying around him and the quest complete sign had popped up on the system, telling him the fight was over.

The rewards started to come in, but Quinn didn't care about that for now. While the students were everywhere celebrating, Quinn was looking at those that were injured and being looked after. He could hear their cries of pain.

Going over to where he could hear a student screaming, several wanted to thank Quinn for what he had done.

"General Hardy, I mean Talen, thank you for saving us."

"You were so strong, I just can't believe we are still alive."

"I want to be like you someday."

Ignoring them all, Quinn eventually managed to reach the student whose mouth was filled with blood, their friend was next to them holding his hand.

"Please, please live!" She shouted.

The boy wasn't dead yet, but he was in a critical state and Quinn went down to his side.

Innu who was also looking for Quinn had rushed over to where he was to see what he was doing, and could see him making a cut on his hand.

'Quinn, what are you doing, think before you act!' Vincent shouted in his mind.

'What do you think I'm doing, I'm saving his life, I'm going to turn him!' Quinn shouted back.

'So you're going to turn everyone who is on the verge of death? Have you taken a look around to see how many people there are? You can't save them all, and how are you going to pick those that deserve to live and those that don't?' Vincent questioned.

'But how, how am I meant to just stay here and do nothing when I know I can save him?' Quinn asked.

'A life of a vampire isn't for everyone, and you can only turn a finite number of people. What happens in the future when you want to turn someone you truly care about, and you can't save them? I know you care for these students a great deal, but in every war you face there will be casualties and if you are going to go against the Dalki in a full out war, they will be forced to fight again and even more people will die.'

While he and Vincent were busy arguing away, the boy had passed, taking his last breath. It was too late for Quinn to do anything.

Innu was actually hoping to come and congratulate, even praise Quinn for what he had done. Being close to someone with that much power would be a good thing, but after seeing the student die and how Quinn and the others were so upset, he realised how selfish he was being.

'How the hell can there be this good of a person in the world?' Innu thought, as he looked at Quinn crying tears over a student that he didn't even know.

However, those tears soon started to turn into anger, as he grabbed the floor and pulled the ground into his hand, turning it into fine dust.

“Eno, if it wasn’t for him overriding the system then we could have saved more lives. Did these kids really deserve to go through all that?!”

Getting up off the ground, Quinn started to look around, tossing and turning his head to see if Eno was anywhere near. He then ran through some of the students at a quick speed not holding back and looked out wide, before running through them again and searching in another place.

Quinn was moving so fast that Innu couldn’t even keep track of him.

‘He can move so fast and he has so much energy. This person, with mind control and more.’ Thinking about all the things a single person could do, Innu’s body was shaking. He wasn’t sure if they should get someone like that on their side, or if knowing there was such a strong person, that it should be something they should get rid off.

Eventually, looking out north, Quinn had spotted Eno, or at least the vampire he had talked to before off in the distance.

“Peter, make sure everyone is okay. This might take a while.” Quinn said, as he dashed off into the distant sand dunes and made sure not to get too close to Eno this time.

“You don’t trust me now?” Eno asked. “Well I don’t blame you. It’s a good way to live through this world, not trusting anyone. I’m also surprised that you’re not attacking me on the spot, or are you afraid, after using that much energy that you might lose?”

Quinn gripped his fist even harder, it was true most of his energy was spent. If he had to have another big fight then he would need to gather more strength, but if that did happen he still had one more move that he could rely on, the shadow overload skill that was still available.

“I think I still have enough to beat you, but that wouldn’t answer any of my questions.” Quinn replied.

“Very well. You have passed my test for you, and as a reward I think it’s time for you and I to speak. Do you have somewhere more private?” Eno asked.

Opening up his hand, Quinn and Eno disappeared into the shadow lock space to have their one on one conversation.

My Vampire System Chapter 1024 – A dangerous man

The large Bertha ship didn’t land on the planet as they had expected. Instead, it stayed hovering in the sky like a giant island. However, smaller sh.i.p.s did depart and immediately descended to two locations in particular, the shelter and a short distance away where the fighting had taken place in the desert.

Support had arrived, only it was far too late and all the damage that could be done had already happened as the Dalki had been dealt with. Oscar had personally decided to arrive along with the support team.

It was the first full scale attack from the Dalki since the peace treaty and Oscar was pretty sure that after the investigations of what happened, that an announcement would have to be made to the whole human race – that they were in the middle of a war.

Inside the shelter a few medium sized sh.i.p.s had landed. Deboarding from the ship was Head General Sach and his trusted sergeants that were usually helping him organise his platoons when he was doing school duties.

What was noticeable about them, was that they had no beast weapons on them, but did have high level beast armour. Along with them each ship carried around twenty people and a total of twenty sh.i.p.s had landed in the shelter. More were to be sent from the large Bertha ship, but when they noticed that there was no longer any trouble, the other troops were sent away.

The first team had even carried with them the portable teleporters. They weren’t quite sure if they worked but if so, they could get others to escape or bring more support with them. What was interesting was that the teleporters started to work as soon as the Dalki were defeated.

The Head General, Samantha, and the Cursed members were ready to head out of the destroyed shelter, with Linda carrying Fex over her shoulder. That was until suddenly five sh.i.p.s had descended in the area. A male and female sergeant debarked from one, while the captains and their squads rushed to Head General Samantha's aid.

'That wasn't too slow of a response from the military.' Sam thought. 'But if we didn't arrive and Fex wasn't here, they could have lost a head general today.'

"Halt!" She stated. "No one is to leave this area. We are to take you to the emergency centre with the others and shall take your weapons. There you shall give a full report of what happened."

"Is this seriously happening right now?" Wevil said, as he looked at the others who just shrugged their shoulders.

Dennis tried moving forward and ignored them, but soon he found one of the men attempting to stop him. It was a larger man than Dennis, who looked strong and had tried to bully him back, but the second the man's hand touched Dennis' c.h.e.s.t, he grabbed it and threw the large man to the floor.

"What are you doing, are you disobeying orders right now!" She shouted as several men were preparing to fight.

"We don't belong to the military. We work 'with' you, not under you." Dennis said.

"He's correct, we are part of the Cursed faction." Sam answered.

"Even so, we have to make a report and learn of what happened here. Surely the Cursed faction aren't so foolish to not even know the basics of war." The sergeant replied.

Sam walked forward, unafraid of the person in front of him, it was the first time he had felt this way. Before becoming a vampire he had felt weak and powerless but something had sparked in him when he looked at the girl.

“Look. I don’t know if you know this, but someone very important to us is on this planet and doesn’t appear to be in this shelter. Until we know he is okay, we won’t listen to anyone’s orders. Not even the supreme commander himself.” Sam said, as a single eye started to glow red, but before they completely turned, Nate cleared his throat, bringing his friend back to reality.

A shiver had gone completely down the sergeant’s spine, but still she wanted to make it clear that nobody could bully her, not when they had important duties to attend to, so she had planned to retaliate.

“Let them go.” Samantha said from far away. She had received minor first aid by some healers and many of her injuries had recovered. “They can make a report when they come back. They are free to leave and make sure no one stops them. That’s an order.” Samantha said.

Hearing this, Sam walked forward and the rest of the group followed as they left the shelter. As quick as they had arrived, they seemed to disappear just as quickly.

“Are you sure that was the right thing to do, Head General?” The sergeant asked.

“Yes.” Samantha replied. “I know now what Oscar was talking about when he said we should be doing everything to get them on our side. The Cursed might be what we need if we have even a chance of winning this war.” She then looked at the multiple dead two spiked Dalki.

It was clear that the forces they had used in the first war wasn’t everything they had, either that or they had evolved and gotten stronger.

Sam and the others had eventually arrived at where the other students and teachers were recuperating. Here several sh.i.p.s from the giant Bertha had landed as well and this was where Oscar had decided to arrive.

The students thought that those from the Cursed were either just travellers or more military personal, but then some of the students had recognised Wevil.

“Hey, isn’t he the one that helped us in the beast weapons lesson?” One of them commented.

“Wait, so are those people from the Cursed faction? It would make sense why they are here if their leader is here.”

‘Those are the guys from the Cursed? They don’t look impressive, I don’t even recognise any of them.’ Innu thought. ‘They took over so many big name factions after taking over Daisy and the other beast planets, and they sent these guys to pick up their leader? If it was Owen, a whole platoon of the Graylash’ strongest would be sent and they would have made quite the entrance.’

Turning around, Oscar managed to catch his eye on one of the Cursed members and walked over to greet himself while his assistant stood by his side.

“It’s great to finally meet you in person after talking over video all this time. You’re a lot smaller than I thought.” Oscar said, looking down at him.

“Do you know where our leader is?” Sam asked to keep it short, because he was afraid that something else might have been revealed other than Quinn’s true title.

“We don’t actually know much about that. I think it’s best if you talk to your other head general, Peter. He seems to know more and just said that he would return eventually.” Oscar replied. “Before you go, I know you’re in a rush but I just want you to think about something. You seem like a smart and capable person based on our previous communications. You don’t have to answer me now, but why do you think the Dalki attacked this place?”

“I’ll be sure to think about it.” Sam said as he walked off towards Peter.

Honestly Sam was already thinking about this question himself. He could see in person the amount of Dalki that had attacked. At first he thought that it might have been Eno’s doing, but from the information they had learnt from Brock it would make no sense for him to do that.

‘Did the Dalki come here because they were after something, or someone? What if they were after Eno, maybe he’s been hiding on this planet this whole time and someone finally found him. Why would the Dalki be after him though?’

The second reason Sam could think of was more likely to be the answer, but he was worried if this was the case. Eno's goal was to protect the demon tier beast that was on the Blade island. If he knew the Dalki were going to attack, did he use a plant? Maybe he gave fake information that the demon tier beast was here. It was quite possible he also knew the movements of Quinn. Tying the two things together he used it as a test for him, and a way to throw the Dalki off the real scent. If Quinn had failed, he still would have killed a lot of Dalki and their goal wouldn't have progressed any further.

'If that's the case, then Eno is a really dangerous man.' Sam thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1025

– Three questions

The shadow space was filled with pitch black shadows so that nothing was visible but their own bodies, which would illuminate slightly while they were inside. If one was to walk through the vast space it would feel like they were walking forever with no destination.

From the inside, one could destroy the space but from the outside, it was nearly impossible for others to interact with. Now inside the safe space, Quinn and Eno were standing opposite each other.

A lot of pent up frustration was already aimed at Eno before what had just happened, but now even more anger was pointed towards this mysterious person. What Quinn needed more than anything however, was not revenge but answers.

"Richard Eno probably doesn't know about me putting myself into the system, even though it does seem quite likely that he was the one that helped me create it." Vincent said. "So I think it's best if we keep it a secret."

Still, Vincent was unsure about this. It seemed like Eno had installed a type of backdoor without him even realising it, allowing him to do things like he had done before. The worrying thing was to what extent could he control Quinn's system.

Could he make it so the bonus stats Quinn received from blood were worthless, or was his control only limited to system only related skills that Eno could stop? Because of this uncertainty, Vincent wanted Quinn to be more on the cautious side.

“Vincent, thanks for the words of advice. You have always been a great help.” Quinn replied.

“Hey, even though he is related to me, you are as well. This is one crazy family, and he’s the start of it.” Said Vincent.

“I know you must have a lot of questions and since you have successfully passed my test, as a reward I will be happy to answer three questions on your mind, and I will answer them fully for you.” Eno said. “You might think you have me trapped in this place, that you could fight me and force me to tell you more, but this is not my real body. At any point in time I can leave this place whenever I wish.”

Quinn never thought Eno would be straightforward, he never had been, but he also could have left during the battle with the Dalki. It was clear that Eno stayed because he too wanted to talk to Quinn and had questions of his own for him.

“Why only three questions?” Quinn asked.

Hearing this, Vincent wanted to go out of the system and start shaking the boy, but all he could do was shake his head.

“I haven’t had enough time to evaluate what you have built up.” Eno answered. “You are a person that was never originally in my plans. I had an inkling about what Vincent was planning to do when he had made his request to help him, but I had no ulterior motives when helping him.

“I helped because I sympathized with Vincent’s situation a lot and I thought it made sense to help out in this way. Also it was an...experiment. How strong would a vampire with a system get? Anyway I’m derailing from the original question now. But it is related. At the moment, I don’t know how strong you or your faction is, nor how strong you can get.

“I believe you not knowing everything and trying to find out the answers yourself has made you even stronger.”

Eno then lifted his hand and placed one of his three fingers down. It was at that moment that Quinn realised his general question had been counted as one of his three permitted questions. He thought he had shot himself in the foot, still Eno was giving a lot of information in his answers at least.

The problem is, did Quin believe him?

With only two questions left, Quinn was really limited to what he wanted to ask. He wanted to know why Eno had made it so he couldn't summon or call the others for help, but that would have been a waste of a question.

"What is your reason for doing all this, what's your goal, what do you get out of this?" Quinn asked.

"A good question." Eno smiled. "It's broad but I'll give you an answer. To put it simply – I care about the humans, maybe even more than Vincent did. During my time as king, the vampire race was doing well, but how could I confirm that would be the case once I slept? Could I go peacefully knowing there was a chance all the hard work I did would have gone to waste? Absolutely not.

"It looks like there are some vampires who are doing everything in their power to crush everything I have built up, and there's a chance it could still fall. As for what I'm doing right now, my goal is the same as the humans, to get rid of the Dalki.

"Right now, that is an impossible task for humans to do without a bit of help, and this is where I come in. If you don't believe me, you don't have to. But I have always been helping them even during the last war and I will continue to help them. The Dalki are stronger than anyone knows, even the vampires should consider them as a threat with the way they are at the moment." Eno answered.

Placing another finger down again, Quinn thought he was pretty serious about only answering three questions which was now making him a little nervous about what to ask. Based on how elusive Eno had been so far as well, he was most likely telling the truth about not being here in person.

'What do I ask about, the system? About Jim and the Dalki? The Green family? What he plans to do now?' There were just too many questions on Quinn's mind and it was driving him a little crazy.

Until he thought of one thing. What Quinn needed to figure out more than anything was what type of person Eno was and whether he could just trust what he was doing. If he was against the Dalki, at least for now the two of them were possibly on the same side.

“Why....Why did you lie to Arthur?” Quinn asked.

When asking this question, Eno’s face changed a little.

“I’m afraid you’re going to have to be a little clearer on that one, what do you exactly mean? Why did I give him the Shadow ability, why I chose to make him a punisher? Remember although I have an idea of your movements, even I don’t know exactly what you have done.” Eno replied.

“Why did you frame the original First king for killing Arthur’s men? Do you know how much that must have hurt. Do you know he’s even looking for you right now?” Quinn asked.

For the first time when answering a question, Eno was quiet for a moment beforehand.

“So you managed to learn the truth somehow. I don’t know how you got this information, but it seems like Arthur now knows as well.” Eno said, sounding remorseful about it.

“Remember what I said before, I would do anything to protect the humans. Now let me make this clear, Quinn. I will do anything to protect the human race. When you have lived as long as me, you realise that individual lives in the total scale of things don’t matter.

“The First family leader always wanted to rule over the humans. I saw the opportunity to get rid of someone who would constantly be trouble, and the best way to do it while restraining the vampires by giving Arthur his shadow power.

“Perhaps you are still young and haven’t lived long enough to understand what I mean, but you now control a force and even in the small fight you just had then I’m sure you understood. I saw what you attempted to do, so let me ask you. Why didn’t you save that boy’s life when you could have?

“Quinn, don’t you hate the system that values strength over everything? Were you worried that in the future if you needed to turn a friend that you wouldn’t be able to? In a way, now those that have a closer relation to you are allowed to be saved, while those that don’t can’t.

“Does that mean that the boy’s death was only because you didn’t care about him?” Vincent asked.

Hearing this, the image of the student that was about to die appeared in his head again, and Quinn was feeling slightly sick.

“Quinn, don’t listen to him. There were more reasons than that as to why you didn’t save him and remember, we couldn’t have been able to save them all. You weren’t controlling the Dalki, you didn’t tell them to attack. It’s not your fault.”

“I know his death is on my hands,” Quinn said, “and I’ve accepted that. But can you say the same? You say you care for humans, but what about the vampires? I’m sure there are some vampires you care for. Otherwise you would have just attempted to massacre the vampires to extinction. But that was never an option for you, was it? You picked Arthur to restrain the vampires, to stop them from attacking the humans, but now that’s pretty useless right? I don’t know what happened, but now Arthur doesn’t want to restrain them – he wants to kill them all and that’s all your fault. You made Arthur into what he has become.”

“What do you mean?” Eno asked.

“I guess you really don’t know everything. Did you think I learnt this shadow ability from Arthur? No, he beat me near to death and he left me with one last message, that he was coming for all the vampires.”

Eno’s eyes widened as it was made clear. This was something Eno had no idea was happening, that Arthur had joined the Dalki’s side. Perhaps this information had just thrown a giant spanner in all of Eno’s plans.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Three questions

The shadow space was filled with pitch black shadows so that nothing was visible but their own bodies, which would illuminate slightly while they were inside. If one was to walk through the vast space it would feel like they were walking forever with no destination.

From the inside, one could destroy the space but from the outside, it was nearly impossible for others to interact with. Now inside the safe space, Quinn and Eno were standing opposite each other.

A lot of pent up frustration was already aimed at Eno before what had just happened, but now even more anger was pointed towards this mysterious person. What Quinn needed more than anything however, was not revenge but answers.

“Richard Eno probably doesn’t know about me putting myself into the system, even though it does seem quite likely that he was the one that helped me create it.” Vincent said. “So I think it’s best if we keep it a secret.”

Still, Vincent was unsure about this. It seemed like Eno had installed a type of backdoor without him even realising it, allowing him to do things like he had done before. The worrying thing was to what extent could he control Quinn’s system.

Could he make it so the bonus stats Quinn received from blood were worthless, or was his control only limited to system only related skills that Eno could stop? Because of this uncertainty, Vincent wanted Quinn to be more on the cautious side.

“Vincent, thanks for the words of advice. You have always been a great help.” Quinn replied.

“Hey, even though he is related to me, you are as well. This is one crazy family, and he’s the start of it.”
Said Vincent.

“I know you must have a lot of questions and since you have successfully passed my test, as a reward I will be happy to answer three questions on your mind, and I will answer them fully for you.” Eno said.
“You might think you have me trapped in this place, that you could fight me and force me to tell you more, but this is not my real body. At any point in time I can leave this place whenever I wish.”

Quinn never thought Eno would be straightforward, he never had been, but he also could have left during the battle with the Dalki. It was clear that Eno stayed because he too wanted to talk to Quinn and had questions of his own for him.

“Why only three questions?” Quinn asked.

Hearing this, Vincent wanted to go out of the system and start shaking the boy, but all he could do was shake his head.

“I haven’t had enough time to evaluate what you have built up.” Eno answered. “You are a person that was never originally in my plans. I had an inkling about what Vincent was planning to do when he had made his request to help him, but I had no ulterior motives when helping him.

“I helped because I sympathized with Vincent’s situation a lot and I thought it made sense to help out in this way. Also it was an...experiment. How strong would a vampire with a system get? Anyway I’m derailing from the original question now. But it is related. At the moment, I don’t know how strong you or your faction is, nor how strong you can get.

“I believe you not knowing everything and trying to find out the answers yourself has made you even stronger.”

Eno then lifted his hand and placed one of his three fingers down. It was at that moment that Quinn realised his general question had been counted as one of his three permitted questions. He thought he had shot himself in the foot, still Eno was giving a lot of information in his answers at least.

The problem is, did Quin believe him?

With only two questions left, Quinn was really limited to what he wanted to ask. He wanted to know why Eno had made it so he couldn't summon or call the others for help, but that would have been a waste of a question.

"What is your reason for doing all this, what's your goal, what do you get out of this?" Quinn asked.

"A good question." Eno smiled. "It's broad but I'll give you an answer. To put it simply – I care about the humans, maybe even more than Vincent did. During my time as king, the vampire race was doing well, but how could I confirm that would be the case once I slept? Could I go peacefully knowing there was a chance all the hard work I did would have gone to waste? Absolutely not.

"It looks like there are some vampires who are doing everything in their power to crush everything I have built up, and there's a chance it could still fall. As for what I'm doing right now, my goal is the same as the humans, to get rid of the Dalki.

"Right now, that is an impossible task for humans to do without a bit of help, and this is where I come in. If you don't believe me, you don't have to. But I have always been helping them even during the last war and I will continue to help them. The Dalki are stronger than anyone knows, even the vampires should consider them as a threat with the way they are at the moment." Eno answered.

Placing another finger down again, Quinn thought he was pretty serious about only answering three questions which was now making him a little nervous about what to ask. Based on how elusive Eno had been so far as well, he was most likely telling the truth about not being here in person.

'What do I ask about, the system? About Jim and the Dalki? The Green family? What he plans to do now?' There were just too many questions on Quinn's mind and it was driving him a little crazy.

Until he thought of one thing. What Quinn needed to figure out more than anything was what type of person Eno was and whether he could just trust what he was doing. If he was against the Dalki, at least for now the two of them were possibly on the same side.

"Why....Why did you lie to Arthur?" Quinn asked.

When asking this question, Eno's face changed a little.

"I'm afraid you're going to have to be a little clearer on that one, what do you exactly mean? Why did I give him the Shadow ability, why I chose to make him a punisher? Remember although I have an idea of your movements, even I don't know exactly what you have done." Eno replied.

"Why did you frame the original First king for killing Arthur's men? Do you know how much that must have hurt. Do you know he's even looking for you right now?" Quinn asked.

For the first time when answering a question, Eno was quiet for a moment beforehand.

"So you managed to learn the truth somehow. I don't know how you got this information, but it seems like Arthur now knows as well." Eno said, sounding remorseful about it.

"Remember what I said before, I would do anything to protect the humans. Now let me make this clear, Quinn. I will do anything to protect the human race. When you have lived as long as me, you realise that individual lives in the total scale of things don't matter.

"The First family leader always wanted to rule over the humans. I saw the opportunity to get rid of someone who would constantly be trouble, and the best way to do it while restraining the vampires by giving Arthur his shadow power.

"Perhaps you are still young and haven't lived long enough to understand what I mean, but you now control a force and even in the small fight you just had then I'm sure you understood. I saw what you attempted to do, so let me ask you. Why didn't you save that boy's life when you could have?

"Quinn, don't you hate the system that values strength over everything? Were you worried that in the future if you needed to turn a friend that you wouldn't be able to? In a way, now those that have a closer relation to you are allowed to be saved, while those that don't can't.

"Does that mean that the boy's death was only because you didn't care about him?" Vincent asked.

Hearing this, the image of the student that was about to die appeared in his head again, and Quinn was feeling slightly sick.

“Quinn, don’t listen to him. There were more reasons than that as to why you didn’t save him and remember, we couldn’t have been able to save them all. You weren’t controlling the Dalki, you didn’t tell them to attack. It’s not your fault.”

“I know his death is on my hands,” Quinn said, “and I’ve accepted that. But can you say the same? You say you care for humans, but what about the vampires? I’m sure there are some vampires you care for. Otherwise you would have just attempted to massacre the vampires to extinction. But that was never an option for you, was it? You picked Arthur to restrain the vampires, to stop them from attacking the humans, but now that’s pretty useless right? I don’t know what happened, but now Arthur doesn’t want to restrain them – he wants to kill them all and that’s all your fault. You made Arthur into what he has become.”

“What do you mean?” Eno asked.

“I guess you really don’t know everything. Did you think I learnt this shadow ability from Arthur? No, he beat me near to death and he left me with one last message, that he was coming for all the vampires.”

Eno’s eyes widened as it was made clear. This was something Eno had no idea was happening, that Arthur had joined the Dalki’s side. Perhaps this information had just thrown a giant spanner in all of Eno’s plans.

My Vampire System Chapter 1026

– A condition

Outside on the field after getting their reports from the students, they were the first ones that had been sent back to the school base located on Earth. Their treatment wouldn’t stop there.

They knew there was more work that needed to be done, not just treating physical injuries but it was important for the students to recover mentally as well. Seeing your friends and fellow pupils die in front of your eyes wasn’t something every single person could cope with in the same way.

Oscar had remained out on the field with a few other soldiers who were taking the Dalki bodies in for research. His reasons for staying were the same for the Cursed faction members who continued to stand in the heat.

*Ding

A ping came in on Jane's tablet, Oscar's assistant who was standing right next to him.

"The reports have come in from the Shelter and Head General Samantha, would you like to read them?" Jane asked, since Oscar for once was seemingly doing nothing.

Whenever she saw him like this, she would remind him that there was always work to be done around the place.

After giving it a detailed read, Oscar was quite surprised about what the reports said.

'In the report, Samantha makes note of the teacher Fex using string abilities and a strange red aura as well. The aura that is described is almost exactly the same as what Innu described, and the same as what I saw Quinn do previously.

'Also, it states that there were other shadow users in the Cursed faction. This red aura that keeps getting mentioned, it seems to be quite powerful. It seems like Quinn isn't just hiding one or two things but is holding more cards than he has let on. This could be a problem.' Oscar thought.

The reaction that Quinn was seeing after what he had said was not what he had expected. Throughout the whole conversation, he was the one on the back foot and Eno was the calm, all knowing one. However, now it seemed like he didn't know every single little thing that was going on in the world.

For a brief second, and it was only once, his heart beat had beaten out of sync from the regular pattern it had before.

'I realise now, in my head I was building up Richard Eno to be this untouchable God pulling the strings on everything that was happening, but now I see that's not the case at all. He is just another person.' Quinn thought.

"You have just provided me with additional information that I did not know about before." He admitted. "You seem to have been more valuable than I realised, and now there are questions I even want to ask you. You keep surprising me even after I have raised my expectations. I hope you can continue to do that.

"Because of this, I will grant you to ask one more question." Eno said.

It was already a head scratcher coming up with the last question, perhaps he could ask where Eno really was, but he could always move after that happened. Or he could ask why the Dalki have decided to attack now and here.

Thinking about what to ask, Quinn started to think about the students, and that led him to think about one more person.

'How could I forget? He has waited long enough and has done so much for us.'

"I know what I want to ask. There is a boy with me that you might know, he goes by the name Sil. His situation is a little... complicated." Quinn went on to explain the details of what happened to Sil, not the full story but just enough for him to know what he needed.

"Yes, I actually know a lot about the Blade family." Eno replied. "What did you want to ask, did you want to know if I knew a way to bring back the other two?"

Quinn nodded.

"I do know, but remember I said you could ask three questions, not three favours and this would be a favour if I were to help you with this, wouldn't you agree?" Eno suggested. "If you wish for me to help, then I have a favour I need in return."

Watching carefully, the Cursed members were starting to sweat buckets with the hot sun scorching them. They hadn't moved and just looked out in the desert waiting for Quinn.

"Can't they upgrade these rings a little?" Nate asked, playing with his finger. "Maybe make something that can also make the heat not affect us."

"We are all experiencing the same thing, Nate." Sam said. "And you don't hear us complaining. Why don't you just imagine that a girl is waiting on the other side of that dune for you, then you would stand there for hours."

A few seconds later, two black portals opened in the distance and they could see Quinn emerge.

"It looks like Quinn didn't need my help after all." Peter said.

When Quinn moved closer, Oscar was happy to know that he looked to be fine. He actually had a lot he wanted to ask Quinn. That's when he noticed that he wasn't alone and a strange man was standing next to him, it was someone that Oscar didn't recognise.

The others wanted to run up to Quinn, but didn't as Oscar was the one who walked forward first and Sam had stopped the others rushing up, to remind them that Oscar was a world leader. Besides, they were just happy that Quinn seemed to be fine.

"Quinn, a lot has happened here today and it's because of you so many people could have survived." Oscar congratulated him. "We have to have a party in your honour to celebrate."

"A party, for what happened?" Quinn replied back, not really understanding what a party would be intended for. People had died at the end of the day.

"Quinn, I think it would be good to celebrate. There are many things to be pleased about and the people need a break before they hear what is about to be announced." Oscar said. "I think your days of being a teacher will be over, so it would be nice to celebrate your time here. Most importantly, it is to announce the achievement of getting a first victory against the Dalki before war is declared."

Meeting Richard Eno, Quinn had kind of forgotten what had happened since he was blaming Richard for everything. But if it really wasn't Richard's doing moving the Dalki, it meant that this was the first official attack from them.

The whole world would soon find out about this and when war was declared, all factions and groups would be on the move just like before when Quinn was a kid.

"If it's something that has to be done. You can organise it with Sam later." Quinn said.

"Yes, you deserve rest, feel free to go back to the others, but before you go, I don't want to be rude. Do you mind introducing me to the person next to you?"

Quinn looked at Eno and was wondering what to say about him, but he didn't have to, because Eno stood forward himself and gave a bow.

"I believe you may know me, but have never met me. My name is Richard Eno." He said bowing down, and walking off with Quinn.

'Richard Eno!' Oscar shouted in his head, even Jane nearly dropped her tablet. Richard Eno was a man everyone was searching for, just as much as they were searching for Jack Truedream but no one could find him, and now he was right there in front of him. The question was, why was he with Quinn? Had Richard Eno been with him the whole time? What was their relationship?

All sorts of questions were running through Oscar's mind, but they had already left and the moment was lost to ask.

When Quinn arrived with Richard by his side, everyone stared at him like he was insane. They could tell it was a vampire standing by Quinn's side due to his smell, and they could also guess who he was.

"It's nice to meet you all, I'm sure we will all get to know each other quite well." Richard said.

"Erhh Quinn, what does he mean by that?" Peter asked, unafraid and ignoring Richard.

“This is Richard Eno, and he will be staying with us on the Cursed ship for a while.” Quinn said.

On the condition of helping out Sil, Quinn was to grant Eno a favour back, and he had asked to observe the Cursed faction.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– A condition

Outside on the field after getting their reports from the students, they were the first ones that had been sent back to the school base located on Earth. Their treatment wouldn't stop there.

They knew there was more work that needed to be done, not just treating physical injuries but it was important for the students to recover mentally as well. Seeing your friends and fellow pupils die in front of your eyes wasn't something every single person could cope with in the same way.

Oscar had remained out on the field with a few other soldiers who were taking the Dalki bodies in for research. His reasons for staying were the same for the Cursed faction members who continued to stand in the heat.

*Ding

A ping came in on Jane's tablet, Oscar's assistant who was standing right next to him.

“The reports have come in from the Shelter and Head General Samantha, would you like to read them?” Jane asked, since Oscar for once was seemingly doing nothing.

Whenever she saw him like this, she would remind him that there was always work to be done around the place.

After giving it a detailed read, Oscar was quite surprised about what the reports said.

‘In the report, Samantha makes note of the teacher Fex using string abilities and a strange red aura as well. The aura that is described is almost exactly the same as what Innu described, and the same as what I saw Quinn do previously.

‘Also, it states that there were other shadow users in the Cursed faction. This red aura that keeps getting mentioned, it seems to be quite powerful. It seems like Quinn isn’t just hiding one or two things but is holding more cards than he has let on. This could be a problem.’ Oscar thought.

—

The reaction that Quinn was seeing after what he had said was not what he had expected. Throughout the whole conversation, he was the one on the back foot and Eno was the calm, all knowing one. However, now it seemed like he didn’t know every single little thing that was going on in the world.

For a brief second, and it was only once, his heart beat had beaten out of sync from the regular pattern it had before.

‘I realise now, in my head I was building up Richard Eno to be this untouchable God pulling the strings on everything that was happening, but now I see that’s not the case at all. He is just another person.’ Quinn thought.

“You have just provided me with additional information that I did not know about before.” He admitted.

“You seem to have been more valuable than I realised, and now there are questions I even want to ask you. You keep surprising me even after I have raised my expectations. I hope you can continue to do that.

“Because of this, I will grant you to ask one more question.” Eno said.

It was already a head scratcher coming up with the last question, perhaps he could ask where Eno really was, but he could always move after that happened. Or he could ask why the Dalki have decided to attack now and here.

Thinking about what to ask, Quinn started to think about the students, and that led him to think about one more person.

‘How could I forget? He has waited long enough and has done so much for us.’

“I know what I want to ask. There is a boy with me that you might know, he goes by the name Sil. His situation is a little... complicated.” Quinn went on to explain the details of what happened to Sil, not the full story but just enough for him to know what he needed.

“Yes, I actually know a lot about the Blade family.” Eno replied. “What did you want to ask, did you want to know if I knew a way to bring back the other two?”

Quinn nodded.

“I do know, but remember I said you could ask three questions, not three favours and this would be a favour if I were to help you with this, wouldn't you agree?” Eno suggested. “If you wish for me to help, then I have a favour I need in return.”

Watching carefully, the Cursed members were starting to sweat buckets with the hot sun scorching them. They hadn't moved and just looked out in the desert waiting for Quinn.

“Can't they upgrade these rings a little?” Nate asked, playing with his finger. “Maybe make something that can also make the heat not affect us.”

“We are all experiencing the same thing, Nate.” Sam said. “And you don’t hear us complaining. Why don’t you just imagine that a girl is waiting on the other side of that dune for you, then you would stand there for hours.”

A few seconds later, two black portals opened in the distance and they could see Quinn emerge.

“It looks like Quinn didn’t need my help after all.” Peter said.

When Quinn moved closer, Oscar was happy to know that he looked to be fine. He actually had a lot he wanted to ask Quinn. That’s when he noticed that he wasn’t alone and a strange man was standing next to him, it was someone that Oscar didn’t recognise.

The others wanted to run up to Quinn, but didn’t as Oscar was the one who walked forward first and Sam had stopped the others rushing up, to remind them that Oscar was a world leader. Besides, they were just happy that Quinn seemed to be fine.

“Quinn, a lot has happened here today and it’s because of you so many people could have survived.” Oscar congratulated him. “We have to have a party in your honour to celebrate.”

“A party, for what happened?” Quinn replied back, not really understanding what a party would be intended for. People had died at the end of the day.

“Quinn, I think it would be good to celebrate. There are many things to be pleased about and the people need a break before they hear what is about to be announced.” Oscar said. “I think your days of being a teacher will be over, so it would be nice to celebrate your time here. Most importantly, it is to announce the achievement of getting a first victory against the Dalki before war is declared.”

Meeting Richard Eno, Quinn had kind of forgotten what had happened since he was blaming Richard for everything. But if it really wasn’t Richard’s doing moving the Dalki, it meant that this was the first official attack from them.

The whole world would soon find out about this and when war was declared, all factions and groups would be on the move just like before when Quinn was a kid.

“If it’s something that has to be done. You can organise it with Sam later.” Quinn said.

“Yes, you deserve rest, feel free to go back to the others, but before you go, I don’t want to be rude. Do you mind introducing me to the person next to you?”

Quinn looked at Eno and was wondering what to say about him, but he didn’t have to, because Eno stood forward himself and gave a bow.

“I believe you may know me, but have never met me. My name is Richard Eno.” He said bowing down, and walking off with Quinn.

‘Richard Eno!’ Oscar shouted in his head, even Jane nearly dropped her tablet. Richard Eno was a man everyone was searching for, just as much as they were searching for Jack Truedream but no one could find him, and now he was right there in front of him. The question was, why was he with Quinn? Had Richard Eno been with him the whole time? What was their relationship?

All sorts of questions were running through Oscar’s mind, but they had already left and the moment was lost to ask.

When Quinn arrived with Richard by his side, everyone stared at him like he was insane. They could tell it was a vampire standing by Quinn’s side due to his smell, and they could also guess who he was.

“It’s nice to meet you all, I’m sure we will all get to know each other quite well.” Richard said.

“Erhh Quinn, what does he mean by that?” Peter asked, unafraid and ignoring Richard.

“This is Richard Eno, and he will be staying with us on the Cursed ship for a while.” Quinn said.

On the condition of helping out Sil, Quinn was to grant Eno a favour back, and he had asked to observe the Cursed faction.

My Vampire System Chapter 1027: Help from an enemy

A special event had been announced the next day. Inviting all the important figures around the world. Giant corporations, manufacturing companies and more. On top of that all the teachers at the school, and high level military personnel had also been invited. Those from the Graylash family weren't left out, including the family head Owen Graylash and finally those from the Cursed faction.

Quinn was ready to head back with the others but when he had received the invitation to the event and told how soon it would be, he decided that he would stay at least till the event was over. Considering how many important people would be there.

An invitation was extended out to those Cursed that had also arrived before the others who were on planet Caladi. The invitation that stuck out the most though, was one that was given to Quinn claiming that they wished for Richard Eno to come along as well.

Before leaving the planet these invites were all given to them in person by Oscar, and now they had arrived back at the large new school and had been given top of the line rooms filled with everything they could ever need to stay in for the time being.

As for Richard, he said he would be coming, but he would be there when he was needed, and seemingly disappeared without saying anything else, he didn't go through a teleporter with them, and just disappeared into the desert, so he was not at the school with them.

Everyone would freshen up, and take a few minutes rest, before Sam requested for all of them to meet up in the same room. Sam wanted to know more about what happened between Quinn and Richard, as well as the fight between the Dalki. It was time they knew more about the bigger picture and all this vampire stuff so they had a better understanding. Through that, they could help out Quinn more.

At the same time, Sam wanted to inform Quinn of everything they had found out from Brock, to do with the Balde island and the role of the Blade family.

Lying in his bed staring at the ceiling Quinn was wondering what was going on.

'Richard Eno, why would you reveal yourself to the world like that, in front of Oscar. Everyone's been looking for you. Are you just trying to cause more trouble for me, or is this one of your tests again.'

Thinking back to Enos' personality, when Quinn had asked for the request to help Sil, he had come back saying that he wanted to stay with the Cursed faction for a while. It had come as a complete surprise to him.

Eno could even tell Quinn was struggling with the request that he had spoken about it.

"Are you worried that I will learn about all of the Cursed faction secrets? It would be the perfect way to destroy a faction from the inside out if you were a thorn in my side, but trust me that is not my goal. If you do think I'm an enemy, have you ever heard of keeping your friends close but your enemies closer?"

"Besides there are a lot of people that want you dead Quinn. If they knew everything about you, and how much of a threat you could possibly be they would be hunting you down quite quickly. I don't think anyone ever expected you to get as strong as you have done."

In the end, Quinn had decided to accept Eno's request. He had a feeling the whole time Eno was telling the truth. Even if he was still acting in his strange ways.

'But I remember you did the same thing back then as well, and you even gave the same reason.' Quinn said.

'That was because I thought it would help with your progress, and I was just trying to get you to avoid certain dangers that were out of your power for the time being.' Vincent argued.

'Do you think that's exactly what Eno is doing then? He states the same thing. Perhaps he thinks at the moment I, or the Cursed faction isn't strong enough. If he told us all the information, or the Humans, they would try acting on it when they couldn't.'

Still it was impossible to figure out without knowing everything. While waiting for the others, and thinking about getting stronger, Quinn did decide to check out one thing, all of the rewards he had received due to completing the quest.

To be honest, Quinn thought the rewards were a bit lacklustre, especially considering what he had done or been through. He could only assume this was because it wasn't a quest given by the system and instead was one given by Eno when his system was overridden which was a scary thought in itself.

[Level 62]

Quinn had levelled up a total of 9 times to reach level 62. It was quite the amount of exp he had gained for defeating the Dalki. He didn't get any instant level ups, so all the level ups he did achieve were from pure exp, but now since he didn't level up every ten levels the exp requirement was just getting bigger and bigger.

At this point, Quinn thought there were only three ways he could now level up. From defeating Demi-god, demon tier beasts or the Dalki. Through defeating beasts and the Dalki he could gain a level up through exp points, or if they awarded him an instant level up. The other way, would be receiving an instant level up quest from the system itself.

'I wonder what level I need to be to complete that Quest.' Quinn thought.

He was thinking about the quest to find something beyond the level of a vampire lord. Would he reach it at level 70, 80 or maybe even a hundred he didn't know. What he did know was with each level up he could feel his body changing into something.

With the stat points awarded Quinn did his usual. He tried to keep his points as balanced as possible, raising them all up to the nearest ten bracket for the best effect. His current stats were like so.

[Strength: 70]

[Agility: 70]

[Stamina: 69]

[Charm 60]

On Vincent's advice Quinn had stopped increasing the charm stat, since he was told at this level there would just be people he could control and people he couldn't, no matter how high his charm stat was.

The following stat was the interesting one, and it had risen to be his highest.

[Blood control: 164]

Steadily Quinn's blood control would grow as he used his blood abilities more often and it was the same during the Dalki fight. After fighting Cindy and Bryce it had increased a lot and using it inside his body all the time he did the same.

'I wonder how high someone's stat would be if they had the absolute blood book?' Quinn wondered.

'Now that your blood control is high enough, it would be nice if you learn some new blood abilities, apart from the basic ones you have been using this whole time.' Vincent said. 'You've trained in fighting and it has reached a good level. If you're going to be fighting using your full strength a lot more, you will no longer be able to hide the fact that you have blood powers, so I think this should be your next step into growing.'

'I remember you saying this before.' Quinn replied scratching his head, a habit when he was struggling. 'But you also stated you couldn't really teach me anything and that I should find a teacher. I think I'm already past the point where Fex could teach me things, which means the only people that could teach me better skills are vampire knights or a leader and I don't think any of the leaders are willing to teach me.' Quinn replied.

What Quinn also noticed when checking his system was while not in the vampire world, he didn't gain any reputation points from his family. So they wouldn't continue to build up while he was away and he couldn't just come back and start making all sorts of improvements using the points.

It was one of the reasons; why Quinn was a little upset with the rewards, he was expecting to get a new title like 'Dalki killer' or something that would help him in the future.

'There will be one person next to you that seems willing to help you. I'm sure they could teach you some new blood skills.' Vincent suggested.

'Are you crazy, you can't be suggesting what I think you're suggesting? You want me to ask Richard Eno to teach me?'

My Vampire System Chapter 1028 – Quinn missing?

By now, Quinn knew to take Vincent's silence as a yes and honestly, he didn't think it was a bad idea. To ask Eno to teach him a few things. Eno was a vampire who had lived longer than any of the leaders, a vampire original. He was sure to know of all the tricks the vampires had come up with when using their blood powers.

The problem was, the type of person that Eno was.

'I'm sure even if he did want to teach me, because I asked him for a favour he would also want one in return, and based on what the favour is, it might just not be worth it.' Quinn thought. Talking to him for a small amount of time was difficult enough, and he couldn't imagine him as a teacher.

A short while later, the rest of the Cursed faction had finally entered Quinn's room.

"What the...I thought our rooms were amazing but yours is as twice as big as ours and is even fancier. Is that a golden tap?!" Nate said excitedly, as he started to play with the tap expecting something else other than water to come out of it.

"Our rooms are nice as well, but it makes sense for Quinn to be treated this way, now that he is a world leader and all." Sam said.

Quinn didn't actually notice that his room was any different than the others. He had been used to the simple life so much that he was happy with just a bed, kitchen and bathroom, he didn't really need anything else. It was a shame that he didn't really have the time to appreciate the luxuries around him.

"This isn't the room they usually give me, I think they just put me up in here for now." Quinn replied modestly.

“Yes, Oscar told me about that.” Sam replied. “It looks like our plan worked somewhat, you made quite an impression on those kids and they have been asking non stop to see you. Not just because of who you are but what you did for them. Oscar couldn’t just let you stay in the normal teacher dormitories now everyone knows you’re a world leader.”

After their little chat, it wasn’t long until they got down to business. Inside Quinn’s room there was even a dining table that was large enough to seat them all and that’s where they decided to sit for the time being. In Quinn’s room were Sam, Wevil, Linda, Nate, Dennis, Peter, and Fex. In other words, it was all the leaders of the Cursed faction that were on Earth at this moment and time.

Quinn started to first explain what happened with the Dalki attack and how he had met Eno beforehand. He didn’t see any need to talk about the system as that was his own business, but he would speak to Logan about it later on.

He then went on to talk about what was discussed with Eno when he had asked his three questions and also his request with Sil. The others already knew about Arthur and more, as they had to learn about the situation from Leo and the others when living in the vampire world. Now they had a better understanding of what was going on, and from what they knew about Brock, they were able to put the two things together.

“I see, well that might make things a little difficult with your request.” Sam said, as he went on to explain what they had also learnt from Brock, that the Dalki were after the second half of the demon tier beast and it was on the Blade island.

“So you think that Eno is going to want to use Sil to copy Mona’s powers and help him move the demon tier beast?” Quinn asked.

“Honestly yes, otherwise Brock would have never told us about it. From what you have told me, maybe Eno’s condition would be to help you only after Sil has helped him.” Sam said.

Quinn nodded as he understood, but Nate looked around the table and he wasn’t the only one confused. “Why?” Nate had to ask.

“Because of the way Sil’s ability was before.” Sam answered. “When Raten and Vorden occupied his head, Sil was only able to use three abilities at one time. To control a demon tier beast is something that not even Mona can do. Once Sil copies the ability he also needs to find other high MC cell users to power up the ability. With three abilities it’s a gamble whether or not he can control the demon tier beast.

“However, with six abilities it’s probably easily done. If Eno brings back Vorden and Raten, Sil could lose his ability to copy six abilities and will be back to the three, same as before. I’m sure due to Brock having lived on the Blade island he knows about this as well and he will use this information and the fact that Quinn wishes to help him against him.”

Now everyone had a better understanding of what was going on but there were still many questions on everyone’s mind.

“What happens if Bryce finds out about this?” Fex asked.

This was something that Quinn hadn’t really been concerned about. He was treating the vampire world and the current war with the humans and the Dalki as two different matters.

“I don’t know.” Quinn replied. “The other half of the demon tier beast the Dalki are looking for is in the vampire world, I don’t even think Bryce and the others know about it, nor that the Dalki are looking for it, and it’s the same for Eno. The only one that I told about Eno still being awake was Arthur, and we know what he plans to do... At the moment, we can’t protect two places at once and for now nothing has happened in the vampire world.

“Although I don’t want to say this, if something does happen, we just have to trust that Bryce and the others will be strong enough to fight off whatever attack happens to them.” Quinn replied.

Although, even Quinn was concerned with what Arthur would do, did he really wish to kill all the vampires including those from the tenth family. If so, maybe he would have to step in and get involved.

After the meeting was over, the rest decided to head back to their rooms for a good night’s sleep, including Quinn. The next day would be the event where everyone from all over was invited. When the morning sun rose, everyone was dressed in their most formal clothing.

They were already woken by the ships that were constantly flying all morning to the new school. Some of them were nervous, others were excited to be meeting people they saw on TV all the time.

When everyone was ready, they met up in the hallway and headed towards Quinn's room. Upon entering however, they found a note that had been left behind.

[I will be a little late to the event. All of you head on without me, there's something I need to do first.]

"If we turn up without him, I'm sure there will be a lot of people who will be asking us questions nonstop." Linda commented.

"Quinn will be there." Sam said. "Besides, I'm sure it's something important to him."

Nearly all of the teachers and important figures were invited to the ceremony and the students' training would be cut short. Today, after the special announcement was to be made, they would be sent off to join the factions of the different squads in the military. Their training would continue there as they prepared for the fight ahead of them.

Right now though, all the students were to stay in their classrooms where a substitute homeroom teacher would be looking after them. Here all the students could watch the event and announcement live on TV. An exclusive crew had been allowed to enter and they would go around talking to guests and interviewing them to broadcast to the entire planet.

All of the students were in their seats, patiently waiting and wondering what the event was, but they weren't in the best of minds. It wasn't too long ago they had just come back from a devastating event.

"Alright, kids the event should start in the next hour or so, you are allowed to eat snacks during the event, but talking has to be kept at a minimum so everyone can hear, okay?" The teacher said.

"Man, I can't believe we didn't even get to say thank you to Quinn." Swin said.

"I know, after everything he has done for us. I still don't understand why a world leader would care about our class or kids like us." Venus replied.

“I think I have an idea.” Shiro said. “Quinn said that he was like me. He had no ability and was weak. Remember all of his speeches? I don’t think that was an act, but you’re right, I wish I could at least say thank you.”

Suddenly, the students started to talk loudly amongst each other as they pointed to the front.

“What’s he doing here, isn’t he meant to be at the event?”

“Before I go off to this god awful event, I just wanted to say one thing. It really was a joy for me to teach all of you. I wish I could have taught you for longer. I promise I will remember these days for the rest of my life and I hope you can remember me as well. I know not all of you will join the Cursed faction, but it would be great to see your faces again.” Quinn said.

As quickly as he appeared, he had vanished and was off to the grand event.

“Quinn! Wait, you were the best teacher we had!” Swin shouted.

“Seriously, how can you leave without us saying thank you to you properly!” Venus said.

More of the students shouted as they truly were thankful for Quinn saving their lives that day. Without him they all knew the situation would have been devastating. They would never forget him for as long as they lived.

“Thank you, but this won’t be the last time I see you. I will return the favour when I join the Cursed faction.” Shiro said.

“I look forward to it.” Quinn whispered.

My Vampire System Chapter 1029 – The most important figures in the world

Despite what Quinn's note had said, the group decided that it might be best if they tried waiting for him for at least a little while. They headed to the location that they had been instructed to go to and up ahead they could see what could only be described as a grand mansion.

It was only a short way from the new school that had been built but was also out of sight, covered by a few of the main buildings. It made people who worked at the school wonder if it had always been there or if it had been built just for today's event.

Regardless, it had a grand finish. The mansion had two huge spiralling staircases that would lead up to the balcony on the second floor, which was large enough to fit a few hundred people. On the ground floor at the entrance there were pillars laced in a special glowing silver substance and even had the most beautiful of beast crystals wrapped around it.

The dozens of people walking past them were wearing much more glamorous clothing than any of the Cursed group, so much so that some of them started to get cold feet as they felt they didn't belong there.

Leading up to the mansion was a stone walkway and a wide red carpet had been laid out for the attendees. The arriving guests walked in on the red carpet while hundreds of camera and video drones were flying through the air, snapping the event.

The Cursed members knew that no one cared about them coming to this event, it was all about Quinn. They also knew if the Cursed faction turned up without him, there would be questions.

"What a waste of beast crystals." Peter said, looking disgusted at the ostentatious pillars.

"You have a point, we risk our lives fighting beasts so we can create better weapons, not so they can be used as decorations." Wevil added, looking at an obviously rich couple walk past. The woman had a timeless black dress on and on her ears she donned earrings with a beast crystal on each.

In a way, the rarer the beast crystal someone had showed how much power a certain family had. Powerful beast crystals would go for a lot of money mainly so they could be turned into weapons, but if someone could purchase them and use them as a fashion accessory, it would show the world how little an expensive beast crystal meant to them.

“I don’t think we can wait much longer. Most people have arrived and if none of us enter, then it might be a problem.” Sam suggested and reluctantly they all followed him walking along the red carpet.

While doing so, some of the other guests who were also walking started to stare at them. They could see they were trying to guess who they were, if it was anyone they recognized. However no matter how hard they tried, they couldn’t figure it out.

“It must be some of the teachers that worked at the school or a captain of a squad.” One of them whispered to another.

“They could be from the Cursed faction, not many people know what they look like.” Another replied.

While making their way along the red carpet, they did spot two people they did recognise, Bonny and Void, the two reporters that they had met when facing the demon tier beast.

When Sam and the others walked through, Bonny recognised them immediately and gave them a smile, before placing a microphone in front of Sam.

“Now we have approaching the door, finally some high ranking members from the Cursed faction. Please could you introduce yourselves to those watching at home and also tell us your role within the Cursed faction.” Bonny asked in her best interview voice.

For the first time ever, while Sam stared into the lens of the camera, he froze. It was half because it was unexpected and half because the Cursed faction didn’t really give out roles, everyone kind of just did what they wanted. On top of that, there were a lot of ears listening in.

“The leaders of the Cursed faction... where’s the leader? I don’t see the person named Quinn?”

“He is meant to be here today right?”

“Of course, Owen and Oscar are at this event too. This is meant to be a gathering of the Earth’s strongest powers. The Cursed being one of the new powers should have arrived before everyone else to make an impression.”

Listening to all these comments was making Sam stumble even more. That's when Linda decided to step in.

"This here is our trusted Vice leader of the Cursed faction. If Quinn isn't present then we follow what he tells us to do. Then we have Peter, who is not only the Head General, but is in charge of our defences on the Cursed ship.

"Wevil and I work together in communications with the other factions. We work closely with Helen from the past Daisy faction who you might have already met before us. We try to make it so if any of the other factions have a problem they can talk to us. Finally, Nate is in charge of our hand to hand combat division. As you can see, we have brought quite a few of our high ranking members here because we understand how important this event is." Linda answered proficiently.

The others were quite surprised that Linda was able to give them all roles so easily, but now that they thought about it, she really did just describe what a lot of them did for the Cursed faction. Although Peter's position was a bit of a stretch, at one point he did protect the ship alone from several attacks.

"That's great to hear. A lot of people don't know about the Cursed faction since they managed to grow so quickly, but Oscar has said that they helped greatly during the demon tier hunting expedition, and Owen has always spoken great things about your leader, Quinn Talen. I have to ask, will we be seeing him tonight? He hasn't made an appearance yet."

Finally, Sam was ready to speak.

"He said he will be here so he will definitely be here. If there is one thing the Cursed faction is good at, it's doing what they say they will do. He just has important matters to attend to." Sam said, while walking off and the others soon followed him.

With seemingly everyone having entered the large hall they could now rest for a little while. The announcement would be made later on and it was time for everyone to mingle and get to know each other, although it was harder for some. Owen stood next to Oscar and there were many that were afraid to even get close to the two of them as they talked.

Meanwhile others were talking while looking their way. Bonny and Void continued to go around interviewing others, asking them questions about what accomplishments they had done and more.

When together the group were standing awkwardly to the side of the room. They clearly felt like the odd ones out as everyone seemed to know each other.

As for Nate, he was looking at a certain person in particular. He was looking over in Helen's direction.

"Hey, you know that she likes Quinn, right? I don't want you to cause drama." Sam said as he spotted Nate staring at her.

"No, I'm not looking at her, she brought her two sisters along to this event as well. Is it alright if I go over?" Nate asked.

After that, there was meant to be an after party where there were no cameras.

"I think it's fine, but just be careful. Bonny and Void might come to interview you at any point and you need to be careful if you answer their questions. Everyone is out to ruin our reputation at the moment. Let's meet back in an hour." Sam suggested, but Nate was already off before Sam had finished speaking.

Peter was fine doing nothing, just leaning up against a pillar looking at everyone. Wevil and Linda were enjoying each other's company. They talked to each other a lot these days, while Sam had plucked up the courage to try and make a few connections.

It was important after all, unless the Cursed faction were planning to take over the world which wasn't Quinn's intention. Sam thought it would be nice to talk to the people they would be working with for the foreseeable future.

At the same time, he would keep an eye out for when Quinn arrived, and when Eno did as well.

This left Fex on his own, who had managed to spot Samantha trying to grab some appetizers from the waiter's walking around, but there were people standing in her way.

A large man, who wasn't paying her any attention had blocked a special seafood dish she was just dying to try. Then suddenly, it started to float in the air, before it landed in her hand.

"Was that what you were trying to get?" Fex asked with a warm smile.

When Samantha turned to see who it was, she was quite startled.

'I knew I might run into him here, but I didn't expect him to come up to me like that.' She thought, as she started to panic.

"Oh thanks, that's exactly what I was looking for." She replied, and was now trying to make a quick exit from the awkward situation, but she could feel Fex's eyes not moving from her.

There was a reason Fex had approached her and when the two made eye contact his eyes started to glow red.

"Do you remember what I asked, I said to make sure you didn't tell anyone about what I did back against the Dalki. Now tell me, did you keep our little secret?" Fex asked.

"Now it's not very nice to speak to a lady like that, is it?" A voice said from behind Samantha.

Seeing the man's red eyes reflect back at Fex, he straight away knew who this was.

"Richard Eno..." Fex replied back.

My Vampire System Chapter 1030

– Close connection

Hearing the voice closely behind, Samantha had no choice but to turn around. For a second, she wanted to thank this person for getting her out of such an awkward situation, but then when she saw who it

was, an older looking gentleman with a grey ponytail who was largely smiling back at her, she took a step back and immediately went on guard.

“You, you were the person who attacked us at the shelter!” Samantha said, recognising the man.

“Oh, I thought you didn’t like the boy, but when a dangerous situation occurs you go jumping to his side. I see how it is. One should be more honest with their feelings, especially since human lives are so short.” Eno said. “Besides, I believe I only attacked the man behind you, I never attacked yourself, and I didn’t even get to explain my own position, anyway I guess I’ll leave you two for now.”

Eno started to walk around the place, and Samantha was getting ready to stop him. He was a member of Pure after all or so Fex claimed, but just as she was about to run, she felt Fex grab her arm.

“What are you doing?”

“Leave him.” Fex said. “He was invited here.”

At the time, she hadn’t really processed what Fex had first said when he had met the man, but now the words became clear, he didn’t just say any name. The name that was spoken was the one and only Richard Eno.

“Wait! is it true? He’s the great scientist known as Richard Eno, the one everyone has been looking for?” Samantha asked.

Based on how Quinn said Eno had already revealed himself to Oscar, and the fact that he was here, Fex thought it wasn’t really a problem telling her the truth.

“He is.” He answered.

“I’m sorry.” Samantha started off. “I know you told me to keep what you said a secret, but I read the reports about your leader Quinn Talen, it says he too used a special Red aura, and one of the men that was presumed dead was actually still alive and had seen everything as well. So I had no choice to tell them about it.”

She was still taking in the fact that the Head General Hardy was actually the Cursed faction leader Quinn.

Hearing about this, Fex tutted and kissed his teeth. His plan was to wipe her memory before she could say anything else, but if a report already stated that Quinn had used the red aura, then it didn't seem like it would be something he could avoid.

"About the other thing, I didn't tell anyone about that. I didn't tell anyone about what was in your flask or what you told me to do." Samantha whispered. "You saved my life, so of course I would keep it a secret, and who cares what strange things you do if you are helping save our lives."

Although what Samantha said was true, she actually thought there might be more to it. Fex had healed due to her blood and also was able to use a red aura, the same as their leader Quinn Talen. She was afraid that blood was the answer to how they were able to do these things.

It could have very well been a Cursed faction secret. If she told people this secret she didn't want to end up disappearing in the middle of the night.

'She didn't tell anyone about the blood, maybe it's best if I remove her memories now then.'

"Richard Eno, you have finally arrived!" A loud deep booming voice spoke.

Hearing this, everyone turned their heads at hearing the name for two reasons. The one speaking was Oscar, and his voice tended to carry across the room, the other reason was because of the name that had been mentioned, Richard Eno.

'Damn, I guess I should leave it for now, she hasn't told anyone yet, but I can clear up the misunderstanding later.' Fex thought, while he went to where everyone else was standing, for they wanted to listen in on the conversation and have a look at the great Richard Eno.

Richard Eno walked over to where Oscar was, he had formal clothing that matched everyone around them so he didn't look out of place at the party. While everyone else had been afraid to walk up to where Oscar and Owen were, Richard was not as he approached them with ease.

What was surprising was the first ones to show respect was both Owen and Oscar as they both bowed.

“You are a difficult man to find.” Owen said, lifting up his fan to cover his face as usual. “You have achieved great things for every family, and it’s great to finally meet you. When Oscar said he had a surprise guest, I never thought it would be yourself.”

Not failing to get a scoop, Void and Bonny had quickly stopped interviewing Head general Innu, who was in the middle of bragging about his group’s achievements and rushed over to listen in and record the conversation between Eno and the great leaders.

It was the first time that anyone had also got him on video, so it was an opportunity that they couldn’t miss.

“If you’re not too busy these days, it would be great if we could have a formal meeting at some point. Perhaps you could even stop by some labs of ours.” Oscar suggested. “I promise we will do anything to make you feel at home.”

Owen started to chuckle and gave a glance at Oscar.

“You should enjoy the event, there is no need to talk about work. I’m sure looking at the military labs might even bore the great Eno. He is a man that loves seeing new discoveries. There are many things the Graylash family have that haven’t been shared with everyone yet, that he might prefer to see.”

“In due time, I think it would be great to see both of those things. Although I’m surprised you don’t have more questions for me?” Eno replied.

Hearing this, one pushy girl reporter shouted out from the crowd that had surrounded them all.

“Um, I have some questions for the camera if you don’t mind.” Bonny said.

“Bonny, Richard Eno is a special guest and I’m sure he has his reasons as to why he has kept himself quiet this whole time, I don’t think it-”

“It’s okay.” Richard replied with a smile. “I’m sure there are questions people want to ask.”

By now, all of the Cursed members at the party had gathered and were watching what Eno was doing, unclear of what his aim was.

‘Why accept an interview?’ Sam thought.

Bonny and Void had come out of the crowd to go closer to the area they were in. When they got closer, Oscar was giving them a stare while Eno was giving a giant smile. It felt like she was stuck between a devil and an angel, but she had to get an interview with Richard Eno, no matter what the cost.

“You are the Great Richard Eno, who helped the human race figure out how to create beast weapons, and even gave us technology such as teleporters and more. They say you are one of the great heroes of the past war. Which is why a lot of people were wondering, just where were you during the Civil war?” Bonny asked.

It was a direct question that not many thought Eno would be happy answering, but he continued to have a smile on his face making it look like he didn’t mind the question at all.

“The world was in a bad place at the time. Although I worked mostly with the military in the past, it was never my intention to be linked with the military. It was just at the time every one of the other strong families worked for the military.

“I didn’t want to take sides or ruin my relationship with any of the families. At the same time, you have to remember that I am just a scientist, not a fighter. I was afraid for my own life as well. At times there may be groups who think if we can’t have him, then it may be better to kill him. I care about my own life as well, of course.”

Bonny had been given an answer far greater than she had anticipated, and the others thought it made sense as well what he was saying. While he was still here, she had to continue to question him.

“Then why the sudden return now? We heard that you had been invited by Head General Oscar. Do you have any plans at the moment?” Bonny asked.

"I'm sure a lot of you will find out that Oscar has a serious message for you all, that will affect everyone else's lives, as for me. I have decided at the moment I will stay with the Cursed faction as I have a close relationship with them." Eno said.

This was the type of thing Sam was worried about. The others were already learning that the Green family, one of the strongest non fighting families, had a close connection with the Cursed faction, and now if Eno was to say this, the others would fear that one of the great powers had too much power compared to the others.

Even in the past, they would stop corporations from having a monopoly over things.

"Close relationship with the Cursed faction," Bonny repeated. "Do you mind elaborating what you mean by that?" She asked.

"Of course," Eno replied. "Quinn Talen is my grandson after all, wouldn't you consider that a close relationship?"

Hearing this, nearly everyone's jaws dropped to the floor. Bonny didn't even know what to say after that. She had prepared many questions in her head for what to ask next but had no clue. At that moment, shadow started to disperse right next to Eno, and Quinn could be seen appearing out of them and held Eno by the shoulder.

"What do you think you're doing?" Quinn said.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Close connection

Hearing the voice closely behind, Samantha had no choice but to turn around. For a second, she wanted to thank this person for getting her out of such an awkward situation, but then when she saw who it was, an older looking gentleman with a grey ponytail who was largely smiling back at her, she took a step back and immediately went on guard.

“You, you were the person who attacked us at the shelter!” Samantha said, recognising the man.

“Oh, I thought you didn’t like the boy, but when a dangerous situation occurs you go jumping to his side. I see how it is. One should be more honest with their feelings, especially since human lives are so short.” Eno said. “Besides, I believe I only attacked the man behind you, I never attacked yourself, and I didn’t even get to explain my own position, anyway I guess I’ll leave you two for now.”

Eno started to walk around the place, and Samantha was getting ready to stop him. He was a member of Pure after all or so Fex claimed, but just as she was about to run, she felt Fex grab her arm.

“What are you doing?”

“Leave him.” Fex said. “He was invited here.”

At the time, she hadn’t really processed what Fex had first said when he had met the man, but now the words became clear, he didn’t just say any name. The name that was spoken was the one and only Richard Eno.

“Wait! is it true? He’s the great scientist known as Richard Eno, the one everyone has been looking for?” Samantha asked.

Based on how Quinn said Eno had already revealed himself to Oscar, and the fact that he was here, Fex thought it wasn’t really a problem telling her the truth.

“He is.” He answered.

"I'm sorry." Samantha started off. "I know you told me to keep what you said a secret, but I read the reports about your leader Quinn Talen, it says he too used a special Red aura, and one of the men that was presumed dead was actually still alive and had seen everything as well. So I had no choice to tell them about it."

She was still taking in the fact that the Head General Hardy was actually the Cursed faction leader Quinn.

Hearing about this, Fex tutted and kissed his teeth. His plan was to wipe her memory before she could say anything else, but if a report already stated that Quinn had used the red aura, then it didn't seem like it would be something he could avoid.

"About the other thing, I didn't tell anyone about that. I didn't tell anyone about what was in your flask or what you told me to do." Samantha whispered. "You saved my life, so of course I would keep it a secret, and who cares what strange things you do if you are helping save our lives."

Although what Samantha said was true, she actually thought there might be more to it. Fex had healed due to her blood and also was able to use a red aura, the same as their leader Quinn Talen. She was afraid that blood was the answer to how they were able to do these things.

It could have very well been a Cursed faction secret. If she told people this secret she didn't want to end up disappearing in the middle of the night.

'She didn't tell anyone about the blood, maybe it's best if I remove her memories now then.'

"Richard Eno, you have finally arrived!" A loud deep booming voice spoke.

Hearing this, everyone turned their heads at hearing the name for two reasons. The one speaking was Oscar, and his voice tended to carry across the room, the other reason was because of the name that had been mentioned, Richard Eno.

'Damn, I guess I should leave it for now, she hasn't told anyone yet, but I can clear up the misunderstanding later.' Fex thought, while he went to where everyone else was standing, for they wanted to listen in on the conversation and have a look at the great Richard Eno.

Richard Eno walked over to where Oscar was, he had formal clothing that matched everyone around them so he didn't look out of place at the party. While everyone else had been afraid to walk up to where Oscar and Owen were, Richard was not as he approached them with ease.

What was surprising was the first ones to show respect was both Owen and Oscar as they both bowed.

"You are a difficult man to find." Owen said, lifting up his fan to cover his face as usual. "You have achieved great things for every family, and it's great to finally meet you. When Oscar said he had a surprise guest, I never thought it would be yourself."

Not failing to get a scoop, Void and Bonny had quickly stopped interviewing Head general Innu, who was in the middle of bragging about his group's achievements and rushed over to listen in and record the conversation between Eno and the great leaders.

It was the first time that anyone had also got him on video, so it was an opportunity that they couldn't miss.

"If you're not too busy these days, it would be great if we could have a formal meeting at some point. Perhaps you could even stop by some labs of ours." Oscar suggested. "I promise we will do anything to make you feel at home."

Owen started to chuckle and gave a glance at Oscar.

"You should enjoy the event, there is no need to talk about work. I'm sure looking at the military labs might even bore the great Eno. He is a man that loves seeing new discoveries. There are many things the Graylash family have that haven't been shared with everyone yet, that he might prefer to see."

"In due time, I think it would be great to see both of those things. Although I'm surprised you don't have more questions for me?" Eno replied.

Hearing this, one pushy girl reporter shouted out from the crowd that had surrounded them all.

“Um, I have some questions for the camera if you don’t mind.” Bonny said.

“Bonny, Richard Eno is a special guest and I’m sure he has his reasons as to why he has kept himself quiet this whole time, I don’t think it-”

“It’s okay.” Richard replied with a smile. “I’m sure there are questions people want to ask.”

By now, all of the Cursed members at the party had gathered and were watching what Eno was doing, unclear of what his aim was.

‘Why accept an interview?’ Sam thought.

Bonny and Void had come out of the crowd to go closer to the area they were in. When they got closer, Oscar was giving them a stare while Eno was giving a giant smile. It felt like she was stuck between a devil and an angel, but she had to get an interview with Richard Eno, no matter what the cost.

“You are the Great Richard Eno, who helped the human race figure out how to create beast weapons, and even gave us technology such as teleporters and more. They say you are one of the great heroes of the past war. Which is why a lot of people were wondering, just where were you during the Civil war?” Bonny asked.

It was a direct question that not many thought Eno would be happy answering, but he continued to have a smile on his face making it look like he didn’t mind the question at all.

“The world was in a bad place at the time. Although I worked mostly with the military in the past, it was never my intention to be linked with the military. It was just at the time every one of the other strong families worked for the military.

“I didn’t want to take sides or ruin my relationship with any of the families. At the same time, you have to remember that I am just a scientist, not a fighter. I was afraid for my own life as well. At times there may be groups who think if we can’t have him, then it may be better to kill him. I care about my own life as well, of course.”

Bonny had been given an answer far greater than she had anticipated, and the others thought it made sense as well what he was saying. While he was still here, she had to continue to question him.

“Then why the sudden return now? We heard that you had been invited by Head General Oscar. Do you have any plans at the moment?” Bonny asked.

“I’m sure a lot of you will find out that Oscar has a serious message for you all, that will affect everyone else’s lives, as for me. I have decided at the moment I will stay with the Cursed faction as I have a close relationship with them.” Eno said.

This was the type of thing Sam was worried about. The others were already learning that the Green family, one of the strongest non fighting families, had a close connection with the Cursed faction, and now if Eno was to say this, the others would fear that one of the great powers had too much power compared to the others.

Even in the past, they would stop corporations from having a monopoly over things.

“Close relationship with the Cursed faction,” Bonny repeated. “Do you mind elaborating what you mean by that?” She asked.

“Of course,” Eno replied. “Quinn Talen is my grandson after all, wouldn’t you consider that a close relationship?”

Hearing this, nearly everyone’s jaws dropped to the floor. Bonny didn’t even know what to say after that. She had prepared many questions in her head for what to ask next but had no clue. At that moment, shadow started to disperse right next to Eno, and Quinn could be seen appearing out of them and held Eno by the shoulder.

“What do you think you’re doing?” Quinn said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1031

– Announcement to the whole world

A few in the room thought they might have misheard what Eno had just said, but when looking at each other and sharing their whispers, they came to the realisation that they hadn't misheard at all. Not only that, but the Cursed faction leader, Quinn Talen had appeared out of nowhere.

Of course, not everyone knew this was Quinn as his new appearance still had yet to be shared around the world, but there were two things that gave it away. The first was the shadows that briefly flickered when he had appeared, and the fact that Quinn was now grabbing onto the shoulder of such a great person, with no trouble at all.

Not anyone could do that.

“Wait, is what he is saying true?”

“The Cursed faction actually have a close relationship with the great scientist Richard Eno. Is this why they were able to progress so fast? Maybe that's how they funded themselves to grow so quickly.”

“But, I also heard that the Green family were sponsoring the Cursed factions as well. It seems like those rumours are true as well. I heard the green family recently bought out a manufacturing plant but when I went to do business with them, some of the personnel working there claimed to be from the Cursed faction.”

As for Oscar, he was more stunned than the others. Because he knew about Quinn's upbringing.

‘Didn't his parents die in the war, he also was meant to have no known relatives. Wait...’ Oscar thought as he remembered one crucial detail. ‘There was something that was strange about Quinn's bringing that stood out.’

‘It was true that on Quinn's file it claimed him to be an orphan, but he had his own apartment growing up. He was getting financial help from someone during his time at school. They paid for his apartment, food, clothes and everything. Could it be Eno was the person responsible for all those things? And why would Eno need to lie in front of everyone about having a close relationship with Quinn.’

At this moment, even though Quinn's hand was on Enos' shoulder, he didn't really know what to do. On his way here after saying goodbye to his students, as soon as he saw the red carpet and floating drones, he had activated his shadow cloak skill.

Using this skill, Quinn was planning to join the party, then naturally blend in. Cancelling the skill and acting as if he was always at the party. When he heard what Eno had said, his instinct kicked in to reveal himself and stop Eno, but now he was unsure what he wanted to do.

"What's wrong Quinn, did you want to give your grandfather a hug, in front of all these people?" Eno said. "Don't tell me you're shy, that I'm your grandfather, are you?"

'This crazy old man, what the hell am I meant to do with him. He's too unpredictable, and he's just making my life harder!' Quinn thought, but took a few deep breaths and smiled.

"As you can see, with his age this old man has got a few screws missing in his head. I think it might be time for me to put you in a home." Quinn replied.

There were gasps and even more from the crowd as people heard Quinn say this. How could someone say this about the genius of their time? What could this person be thinking? On top of that, based on how Quinn was treating this person, it only made it clear that the two of them must have a close relationship.

Sam off to the side was just shaking his head, if only he could go in there and drag the two of them out, but in a way he was hoping the situation would somehow resolve itself.

"Quinn, don't be embarrassed. You see everyone." Eno spoke facing the crowd. "We didn't want to make our relationship clear for a simple reason. We didn't know we were relatives for a while. In fact, Quinn had achieved everything he had built up with the Cursed faction even before we knew of our relationship.

"He was afraid you see, afraid that if people did find out, that they would assume I was the one sponsoring and helping him out this whole time, but that's not true at all. Anyway, let's all continue to enjoy this party." Eno said, lifting up a glass that seemingly appeared in his hand like a magic trick.

Lifting it up, everyone else in the room lifted their glasses as well, and as they took a drink. He gave a quick wink to Quinn.

Seeing this, Quinn really didn't know what Enos' game was nor what he was planning. He decided maybe it was best for him to leave him alone and went ahead to join Sam.

'Didn't help him get the position to where he is now? Who is he kidding?' Innu thought. 'Obviously even if Quinn didn't know about it. Richard Eno being who he was pulled the strings for him, now I understand why Oscar let him become one of the world leaders so easily.'

"Are you still thinking like that?' Head General Sach said, as if he could read Innu's thoughts. "Remember what he did out on the field, how he saved your lives. He is strong, and even with the great scientist Richard Enos' help, I don't think everyone could reach the position that he has done. You have to give the young boy some credit."

Bonny and Void wanted to go ahead and interview Quinn next, but unfortunately they had run out of time, as Oscar had climbed up the stairs, and invited Quinn, along with Owen with him. The stairs led to a podium that was inside the grand room.

Floating drones were hovering in the air capturing everything and standing in the centre was Oscar with a serious face, and Owen and Quinn on the either side.

"I hope everyone has enjoyed the celebration today, and I hope the whole world is celebrating with us, because today there is an announcement that is to be made to the whole world. After I inform everyone of what has happened, and what will happen, I want you to continue to party until the night is over." Oscar stated, as a drone moved and zoomed into his face.

"I'm sure many of you at home will already know what has happened. As your children have called you soon to let you know of the tales, and some of you had been informed with bad news.

However, this day was always coming and in my eyes it should be celebrated as a victory."

Behind Oscar, a display started to appear showing a map of planet Caladi.

“A few days ago, the students were on their first hunting expedition on planet Caladi. This is when an invasion of fifty Dalki had come to attack them.”

The simulation showed the black pods hitting the planet from out of space and made them realise it was quite real.

Those below that were smiling just seconds ago, stopped drinking their drinks and were listening intently. Not everyone had children, or children who were going through military training so this was new news to them.

“Fifty Dalki, it was the first time a force had been sent out to attack us. Of course there have been scuffles when fortresses have been found on Beast planets before. But ever since the treaty this is the first time that a force has been sent out to a beast planet that is clearly owned by us.

“What was worse, no teleporters and communication devices were responding, so the students were left stranded without help other than their teachers there for support.”

The others thought rather than a story about a great victory, it was a horror story. They couldn't imagine themselves being in that situation nor what they would do.

“Now how is this a victory, you might ask, because we managed to defeat the force of 50 dalki, with a little over a hundred casualties. Their names will never be forgotten, and have been engraved in the school walls. The teachers and the students, and their families will be looked after.”

The chatter in the room started once again, as they came to the realisation of how impressive the victory was. Fifty Dalki, yet only a hundred or so students had died. How was that possible in the situation they were in.

“There is one person we must thank more than any other, and that is Head general Quinn Talen, the leader of the Cursed faction.” Oscar announced pointing towards Quinn, as military perusal came up and placed a medal over his head.

On the Cursed ship itself, nearly every room was watching the broadcast and as soon as they heard his name, they were cheering for their leader. It was the same for those on the planets that the Cursed faction owned.

They knew how well they were treated and it was all thanks to this person.

Lastly, the students in Quinn's class couldn't help but shout at the top of their lungs at the screen, even the substitute teacher was blown away at how passionate the students were.

"A lot of you may not know this, but some of you at home do. Quinn Talen was a teacher at our school, and I am thankful that he was there at the time. Without him, there would have been many more casualties. Alone he managed to defeat over half of the oncoming force, and I know he did everything in his power to protect the students."

No matter what thoughts people had against the Cursed faction in that room at the time. They couldn't help but congratulate this person who was practically a stranger to them. They all started to clap and looked up to the young boy. His achievement was not something many could have done.

"Today is a celebration for the human race, for we have achieved victory over the first Dalki attack, and it might be the last one we have in a while. Because after today, I will declare that the whole world, the whole human race, is now in the middle of the second war with the Dalki race."

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

– Announcement to the whole world

A few in the room thought they might have misheard what Eno had just said, but when looking at each other and sharing their whispers, they came to the realisation that they hadn't misheard at all. Not only that, but the Cursed faction leader, Quinn Talen had appeared out of nowhere.

Of course, not everyone knew this was Quinn as his new appearance still had yet to be shared around the world, but there were two things that gave it away. The first was the shadows that briefly flickered when he had appeared, and the fact that Quinn was now grabbing onto the shoulder of such a great person, with no trouble at all.

Not anyone could do that.

"Wait, is what he is saying true?"

"The Cursed faction actually have a close relationship with the great scientist Richard Eno. Is this why they were able to progress so fast? Maybe that's how they funded themselves to grow so quickly."

"But, I also heard that the Green family were sponsoring the Cursed factions as well. It seems like those rumours are true as well. I heard the green family recently bought out a manufacturing plant but when I went to do business with them, some of the personnel working there claimed to be from the Cursed faction."

As for Oscar, he was more stunned than the others. Because he knew about Quinn's upbringing.

'Didn't his parents die in the war, he also was meant to have no known relatives. Wait...' Oscar thought as he remembered one crucial detail. 'There was something that was strange about Quinn's bringing that stood out.'

'It was true that on Quinn's file it claimed him to be an orphan, but he had his own apartment growing up. He was getting financial help from someone during his time at school. They paid for his apartment, food, clothes and everything. Could it be Eno was the person responsible for all those things? And why would Eno need to lie in front of everyone about having a close relationship with Quinn.'

At this moment, even though Quinn's hand was on Enos' shoulder, he didn't really know what to do. On his way here after saying goodbye to his students, as soon as he saw the red carpet and floating drones, he had activated his shadow cloak skill.

Using this skill, Quinn was planning to join the party, then naturally blend in. Cancelling the skill and acting as if he was always at the party. When he heard what Eno had said, his instinct kicked in to reveal himself and stop Eno, but now he was unsure what he wanted to do.

"What's wrong Quinn, did you want to give your grandfather a hug, in front of all these people?" Eno said. "Don't tell me you're shy, that I'm your grandfather, are you?"

'This crazy old man, what the hell am I meant to do with him. He's too unpredictable, and he's just making my life harder!' Quinn thought, but took a few deep breaths and smiled.

"As you can see, with his age this old man has got a few screws missing in his head. I think it might be time for me to put you in a home." Quinn replied.

There were gasps and even more from the crowd as people heard Quinn say this. How could someone say this about the genius of their time? What could this person be thinking? On top of that, based on how Quinn was treating this person, it only made it clear that the two of them must have a close relationship.

Sam off to the side was just shaking his head, if only he could go in there and drag the two of them out, but in a way he was hoping the situation would somehow resolve itself.

"Quinn, don't be embarrassed. You see everyone." Eno spoke facing the crowd. "We didn't want to make our relationship clear for a simple reason. We didn't know we were relatives for a while. In fact, Quinn had achieved everything he had built up with the Cursed faction even before we knew of our relationship.

"He was afraid you see, afraid that if people did find out, that they would assume I was the one sponsoring and helping him out this whole time, but that's not true at all. Anyway, let's all continue to enjoy this party." Eno said, lifting up a glass that seemingly appeared in his hand like a magic trick.

Lifting it up, everyone else in the room lifted their glasses as well, and as they took a drink. He gave a quick wink to Quinn.

Seeing this, Quinn really didn't know what Enos' game was nor what he was planning. He decided maybe it was best for him to leave him alone and went ahead to join Sam.

'Didn't help him get the position to where he is now? Who is he kidding?' Innu thought. 'Obviously even if Quinn didn't know about it. Richard Eno being who he was pulled the strings for him, now I understand why Oscar let him become one of the world leaders so easily.'

"Are you still thinking like that?' Head General Sach said, as if he could read Innu's thoughts. "Remember what he did out on the field, how he saved your lives. He is strong, and even with the great scientist Richard Enos' help, I don't think everyone could reach the position that he has done. You have to give the young boy some credit."

Bonny and Void wanted to go ahead and interview Quinn next, but unfortunately they had run out of time, as Oscar had climbed up the stairs, and invited Quinn, along with Owen with him. The stairs led to a podium that was inside the grand room.

Floating drones were hovering in the air capturing everything and standing in the centre was Oscar with a serious face, and Owen and Quinn on the either side.

"I hope everyone has enjoyed the celebration today, and I hope the whole world is celebrating with us, because today there is an announcement that is to be made to the whole world. After I inform everyone of what has happened, and what will happen, I want you to continue to party until the night is over." Oscar stated, as a drone moved and zoomed into his face.

"I'm sure many of you at home will already know what has happened. As your children have called you soon to let you know of the tales, and some of you had been informed with bad news.

However, this day was always coming and in my eyes it should be celebrated as a victory."

Behind Oscar, a display started to appear showing a map of planet Caladi.

“A few days ago, the students were on their first hunting expedition on planet Caladi. This is when an invasion of fifty Dalki had come to attack them.”

The simulation showed the black pods hitting the planet from out of space and made them realise it was quite real.

Those below that were smiling just seconds ago, stopped drinking their drinks and were listening intently. Not everyone had children, or children who were going through military training so this was new news to them.

“Fifty Dalki, it was the first time a force had been sent out to attack us. Of course there have been scuffles when fortresses have been found on Beast planets before. But ever since the treaty this is the first time that a force has been sent out to a beast planet that is clearly owned by us.

“What was worse, no teleporters and communication devices were responding, so the students were left stranded without help other than their teachers there for support.”

The others thought rather than a story about a great victory, it was a horror story. They couldn't imagine themselves being in that situation nor what they would do.

“Now how is this a victory, you might ask, because we managed to defeat the force of 50 dalki, with a little over a hundred casualties. Their names will never be forgotten, and have been engraved in the school walls. The teachers and the students, and their families will be looked after.”

The chatter in the room started once again, as they came to the realisation of how impressive the victory was. Fifty Dalki, yet only a hundred or so students had died. How was that possible in the situation they were in.

“There is one person we must thank more than any other, and that is Head general Quinn Talen, the leader of the Cursed faction.” Oscar announced pointing towards Quinn, as military perusal came up and placed a medal over his head.

On the Cursed ship itself, nearly every room was watching the broadcast and as soon as they heard his name, they were cheering for their leader. It was the same for those on the planets that the Cursed faction owned.

They knew how well they were treated and it was all thanks to this person.

Lastly, the students in Quinn's class couldn't help but shout at the top of their lungs at the screen, even the substitute teacher was blown away at how passionate the students were.

"A lot of you may not know this, but some of you at home do. Quinn Talen was a teacher at our school, and I am thankful that he was there at the time. Without him, there would have been many more casualties. Alone he managed to defeat over half of the oncoming force, and I know he did everything in his power to protect the students."

No matter what thoughts people had against the Cursed faction in that room at the time. They couldn't help but congratulate this person who was practically a stranger to them. They all started to clap and looked up to the young boy. His achievement was not something many could have done.

"Today is a celebration for the human race, for we have achieved victory over the first Dalki attack, and it might be the last one we have in a while. Because after today, I will declare that the whole world, the whole human race, is now in the middle of the second war with the Dalki race."

My Vampire System Chapter 1032

– Rude or a pass?

The announcement had spread, that war had finally been declared. It was something everyone knew was just over the horizon, it felt so close yet at the same time so far away. Constantly mentions of tensions brewing between the two sides, of small scuffles with the Dalki here and there.

Everyone had been on edge for so long waiting to hear this news, which was why it was such a big deal for everyone, to finally hear these words.

Now that war had been declared, the day after everything would move into motion. The shelters on every one of the planets that was owned by the humans would be on high alert. Drills after drills of what the military and factions were to do if an attack would happen, would now be practised on the daily, rather than once in a while.

And of course, all of them had to be prepared to attack and be on the attack whenever possible. Today was the last day of peace for everyone as they knew it. After dropping quite the bombshell on the whole world, Oscar went on to explain what the military had been doing in the meantime and how they planned to win this war this time.

They had attempted to contact the Dalki like they would with any other attack but there was no response at all. In the meantime, they would be on the defensive while looking for opportunities to attack where and when they could.

What Oscar didn't mention was the main reason why they were on the defensive. This was due to the most recent attack. Where they had found many two spiked Dalki in their forces. Based on this, it was assumed the Dalki hadn't attacked with the full strength of their force during the first war, but Oscar wanted to encourage everyone and would keep these worries to a select few people.

Once the announcement was all done, Quinn was descending from the staircase, it would soon be time for the cameras to be turned off, but before that. Bonny and Void would be able to broadcast peoples reactions to the news that they had just heard, and her aim was to grab the person who was currently everyone's centre of attention.

"Quinn, would you mind me asking a few questions?!" Bonny said, bombarding him at the bottom of the staircase. "The medal around your c.h.e.s.t, is the same medals that were given to the people deemed the Heroes of the first war. It's quite the accomplishment to be receiving that right out the bat at the start of the second war.

"Could you please explain to us how you feel about receiving such a thing and how you managed to kill so many of the opposing Dalki." Bonny asked.

Quinn didn't reply straight away, but he had stopped. It was at this point that Bonny was able to see how much he had changed since the last time they had met. For some reason, every time she met him he looked more handsome.

Last time, something had urged her forward to kiss him out of the blue, but this time her heart was beating quite loudly on its own.

After hearing no reply for so long, Bonny decided to order Void to place the camera down, and she approached him gently.

“Quinn are you okay, sorry if I asked something that brought up bad memories. I was just trying to do my job.” She said.

Still not answering now, Bonny was feeling a little bad.

“Let’s just forget about the question, okay. I hope we can meet at the after party?”

At that moment, Bonny could see another female approach Quinn and gave him quite the slap on the back.

“Answer the cute girl,” Helen said. “Don’t worry, this one isn’t used to all this stuff, you have to remember it’s a lot to deal with someone who is his age.”

Bonny had almost forgotten due to Quinn’s appearance of a young middle-aged man, he actually was a young a.d.u.l.t who had just turned eighteen. Of course, this was a lot for anyone to take in.

“About your question.” Quinn finally answered. “How do I feel about it all?” Quinn lifted up the medal around his neck, and pulled on it, breaking the strap. It was gold in colour, a rarer material than ever nowadays. Grasping it in his hand, he started to squeeze on it until the edge began to bend inwards, and finally he crushed the entire medal in his hands.

Some of those that were around seeing him do this, were quite shocked. It was a reward of honour. It was something that everyone in the military greatly respected.

“How many of these do I have to get? How many of these do I have to get to bring all those that died back to life?” Quinn asked, but of course Bonny didn’t have an answer.

As things were getting interesting again, Void turned on the camera and zoomed into the crushed medal in his hand, and then back to Quinn's face which was one not quite of anger, but not quite sadness either.

"The only thing I wished I could have done, was saved more lives." Quinn said, leaving the room, and Helen followed after him.

Walking through the crowds of people, they started to make their way to the exit, and soon those in the Cursed faction joined Quinn as well to walk out of the place.

"Hey wait, aren't you going to join the after party?" Bonny shouted.

Sam who was at the very back turned to everyone.

"I am very sorry, but the Cursed faction have to make preparations for the announcement that has just been made. I'm afraid we won't be joining the after party."

Soon after, Eno had joined the back of the group as well.

Those in the room were unable to hear what Quinn had said, and thought the Cursed faction were now quite arrogant. Having thrown their reward given to him like so. Treating it like it was nothing.

However, those that had watched the program and had fought side by side who had lost those close to them understood what Quinn was going through right now. No amount of rewards would change how he was feeling at that moment.

With war happening, Quinn wanted to continue on and improve so the same thing wouldn't happen again.

What Sam said was true as well, he needed to organise the Cursed faction well. Including the three platoons that would be given to him by Oscar to command. They had quite the large force and that many people in Sam's hands, the pressure was already getting to him a bit.

While flying through space and heading back to the Cursed ship, everyone noticed that Quinn's mood was still quite sombre, and what was worse, Eno wasn't talking to anyone or saying anything to Quinn either.

It was like they had made a pact to not talk to each other.

"So is Eno really his grandpa, or was that just some kind of act?" Helen asked Sam who was at the front of the ship looking out into space.

"I believe, it's quite complicated. I don't even think they know what their relationship is quite like" Sam replied.

It was a long and tiring trip, and while the others were sleeping. Sam decided to watch the recorded event back to see how they were portrayed. Bonny had asked many large figures what they thought of the Cursed faction, and some of them gave quite political answers.

It seemed like what they had done so far was sit on the fence. Neither saying negative nor positive things about them. Whereas before they were outright against the Cursed faction. Still, there were those that still seemed to hate them. People didn't like change, and the Cursed faction was doing a lot of that.

What was most important to Sam though, was how Eno and Quinn had come across when the two of them were arguing, and when Quinn had crunched up the medal. Judging by the comments from the video he was watching, it was mixed.

Some agreed with what Quinn had said, while others just thought he was being ungrateful.

'I'm glad that the microphone was able to pick up what he said, otherwise that would have been another PR disaster.' Sam thought.

Eventually, setting it to autopilot and swapping out with Helen, they were able to get some sleep, and after a short while they had arrived.

The first one to stand by the exit of the ship was Eno, and no one wanted to step in front of him either. It just felt awkward and even more awkward he was already treating like he owned the whole place.

Once the railing had gone down to the floor, Eno took a step on the Cursed ship for the first time.

“Alright, let’s go and fix this Sil boy you were talking about earlier. You kept your side of the deal, so I will do mine as well.”

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

.. .

– Rude or a pass?

The announcement had spread, that war had finally been declared. It was something everyone knew was just over the horizon, it felt so close yet at the same time so far away. Constantly mentions of tensions brewing between the two sides, of small scuffles with the Dalki here and there.

Everyone had been on edge for so long waiting to hear this news, which was why it was such a big deal for everyone, to finally hear these words.

Now that war had been declared, the day after everything would move into motion. The shelters on every one of the planets that was owned by the humans would be on high alert. Drills after drills of what

the military and factions were to do if an attack would happen, would now be practised on the daily, rather than once in a while.

And of course, all of them had to be prepared to attack and be on the attack whenever possible. Today was the last day of peace for everyone as they knew it. After dropping quite the bombshell on the whole world, Oscar went on to explain what the military had been doing in the meantime and how they planned to win this war this time.

They had attempted to contact the Dalki like they would with any other attack but there was no response at all. In the meantime, they would be on the defensive while looking for opportunities to attack where and when they could.

What Oscar didn't mention was the main reason why they were on the defensive. This was due to the most recent attack. Where they had found many two spiked Dalki in their forces. Based on this, it was assumed the Dalki hadn't attacked with the full strength of their force during the first war, but Oscar wanted to encourage everyone and would keep these worries to a select few people.

Once the announcement was all done, Quinn was descending from the staircase, it would soon be time for the cameras to be turned off, but before that. Bonny and Void would be able to broadcast peoples reactions to the news that they had just heard, and her aim was to grab the person who was currently everyone's centre of attention.

"Quinn, would you mind me asking a few questions?!" Bonny said, bombarding him at the bottom of the staircase. "The medal around your c.h.e.s.t, is the same medals that were given to the people deemed the Heroes of the first war. It's quite the accomplishment to be receiving that right out the bat at the start of the second war.

"Could you please explain to us how you feel about receiving such a thing and how you managed to kill so many of the opposing Dalki." Bonny asked.

Quinn didn't reply straight away, but he had stopped. It was at this point that Bonny was able to see how much he had changed since the last time they had met. For some reason, every time she met him he looked more handsome.

Last time, something had urged her forward to kiss him out of the blue, but this time her heart was beating quite loudly on its own.

After hearing no reply for so long, Bonny decided to order Void to place the camera down, and she approached him gently.

“Quinn are you okay, sorry if I asked something that brought up bad memories. I was just trying to do my job.” She said.

Still not answering now, Bonny was feeling a little bad.

“Let’s just forget about the question, okay. I hope we can meet at the after party?”

At that moment, Bonny could see another female approach Quinn and gave him quite the slap on the back.

“Answer the cute girl,” Helen said. “Don’t worry, this one isn’t used to all this stuff, you have to remember it’s a lot to deal with someone who is his age.”

Bonny had almost forgotten due to Quinn’s appearance of a young middle-aged man, he actually was a young a.d.u.l.t who had just turned eighteen. Of course, this was a lot for anyone to take in.

“About your question.” Quinn finally answered. “How do I feel about it all?” Quinn lifted up the medal around his neck, and pulled on it, breaking the strap. It was gold in colour, a rarer material than ever nowadays. Grasping it in his hand, he started to squeeze on it until the edge began to bend inwards, and finally he crushed the entire medal in his hands.

Some of those that were around seeing him do this, were quite shocked. It was a reward of honour. It was something that everyone in the military greatly respected.

“How many of these do I have to get? How many of these do I have to get to bring all those that died back to life?” Quinn asked, but of course Bonny didn’t have an answer.

As things were getting interesting again, Void turned on the camera and zoomed into the crushed medal in his hand, and then back to Quinn's face which was one not quite of anger, but not quite sadness either.

"The only thing I wished I could have done, was saved more lives." Quinn said, leaving the room, and Helen followed after him.

Walking through the crowds of people, they started to make their way to the exit, and soon those in the Cursed faction joined Quinn as well to walk out of the place.

"Hey wait, aren't you going to join the after party?" Bonny shouted.

Sam who was at the very back turned to everyone.

"I am very sorry, but the Cursed faction have to make preparations for the announcement that has just been made. I'm afraid we won't be joining the after party."

Soon after, Eno had joined the back of the group as well.

Those in the room were unable to hear what Quinn had said, and thought the Cursed faction were now quite arrogant. Having thrown their reward given to him like so. Treating it like it was nothing.

However, those that had watched the program and had fought side by side who had lost those close to them understood what Quinn was going through right now. No amount of rewards would change how he was feeling at that moment.

With war happening, Quinn wanted to continue on and improve so the same thing wouldn't happen again.

What Sam said was true as well, he needed to organise the Cursed faction well. Including the three platoons that would be given to him by Oscar to command. They had quite the large force and that many people in Sam's hands, the pressure was already getting to him a bit.

While flying through space and heading back to the Cursed ship, everyone noticed that Quinn's mood was still quite sombre, and what was worse, Eno wasn't talking to anyone or saying anything to Quinn either.

It was like they had made a pact to not talk to each other.

"So is Eno really his grandpa, or was that just some kind of act?" Helen asked Sam who was at the front of the ship looking out into space.

"I believe, it's quite complicated. I don't even think they know what their relationship is quite like" Sam replied.

It was a long and tiring trip, and while the others were sleeping. Sam decided to watch the recorded event back to see how they were portrayed. Bonny had asked many large figures what they thought of the Cursed faction, and some of them gave quite political answers.

It seemed like what they had done so far was sit on the fence. Neither saying negative nor positive things about them. Whereas before they were outright against the Cursed faction. Still, there were those that still seemed to hate them. People didn't like change, and the Cursed faction was doing a lot of that.

What was most important to Sam though, was how Eno and Quinn had come across when the two of them were arguing, and when Quinn had crunched up the medal. Judging by the comments from the video he was watching, it was mixed.

Some agreed with what Quinn had said, while others just thought he was being ungrateful.

'I'm glad that the microphone was able to pick up what he said, otherwise that would have been another PR disaster.' Sam thought.

Eventually, setting it to autopilot and swapping out with Helen, they were able to get some sleep, and after a short while they had arrived.

The first one to stand by the exit of the ship was Eno, and no one wanted to step in front of him either. It just felt awkward and even more awkward he was already treating like he owned the whole place.

Once the railing had gone down to the floor, Eno took a step on the Cursed ship for the first time.

“Alright, let’s go and fix this Sil boy you were talking about earlier. You kept your side of the deal, so I will do mine as well.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1033

– You should be dead

When getting off the ship, some of the others thought they might have some time to rest. Even though they had slept on the ship it wasn’t the same, their bodies were sore and their minds still weren’t prepared for what was about to happen.

However, Eno seemed to be ready for action as soon as they had landed.

“Do not worry, you guys can relax for a bit. I can take care of Eno while he is here.” Quinn said. “Besides, I’m sure the rest of you have some important things to do, we don’t all need to be keeping an eye on him twenty four seven.”

Although Quinn said this, a lot of them felt too uncomfortable leaving a stranger in the Cursed ship, especially one that was a vampire. However, whatever Quinn wanted they would do so and Quinn was right, they did all have their own things to do.

Now that war had started, some wanted to contact their parents and get them to move from whatever planet they were on and have them come on board the Cursed ship, where they believed it was the safest place for them to be.

“Correction, you don’t need to keep an eye on me at all. I won’t cause the crew any trouble, I want everyone to do things how they would do as if I wasn’t here. Remember, I am here to observe just how great the Cursed faction is, I don’t want you to put on an act.” Eno said.

Sam gave Quinn another look, trying to see if he was really okay leaving the two of them alone. Eno hadn’t exactly been staying out of trouble, but was being nothing but trouble so far.

“It’s easier this way, I wanted to get straight down to business.” Quinn replied. “I had my rest at the school, so don’t worry too much about me.”

Even though Quinn reassured him, Sam was worried. Also what type of rest was Quinn even talking about? While at school he had run into so many troubles and even was in the middle of a fight with deadly Dalki, if anything he should be the most tired out of all of them.

Still, Sam couldn’t babysit Eno all the time, and there probably weren’t many on the ship that could either, so he thought this might actually be the best course of action if he and Quinn were together all the time.

‘I just hope those two don’t get into some type of huge argument.’ Sam thought, leaving the two on their own.

As the group split off to do their own thing, Quinn went ahead in order to look for Sil, getting straight down to business.

‘I wonder how Sil has been since he was sent back?’ Quinn thought.

Remembering that he was a bit unstable, but it was the only thing he could do at the time.

However, while on his way to the school centre on the ship, where he thought Sil would be, he could see a small boy running towards them out of breath.

He had his hands on his knees and was gasping for air, it was clear the person didn’t do much physical activity often.

“You...You...your Eno!” The boy said, lifting up his head, and Quinn could see that the person who he thought was a young boy, was actually Logan.

“Ah, I know you. You are the one from the Green family, correct? Brock has been keeping quite the eye on you and your development has been exceptional.” Eno said, looking at the boy with a smile, but Logn wasn’t smiling back.

Now that Logan was looking up at him, the person he had been looking for this whole time, he had frozen. His mouth was twitching but the questions just wouldn’t come out, until, he eventually said a few words.

“My...My parents...did you kill them?” Logan eventually managed to stutter out.

Eno then knelt down to eye level with Logan and looked him in the eye.

“Tell me. If I said I did, what would you do?” Eno taunted him.

Quinn knew all about the situation with Logan’s family, their past and their history with vampires. He was now wondering what the hell Eno was doing, saying these words.

What happened next, Quinn didn’t expect at all. Logan swung his right hand out, it was his new Dalki hand that was encased in a special metallic material in order to cover it up. However, as soon as Quinn saw the movement from Logan, he didn’t know why but he had moved forward.

His body stepped in front of Eno and he had blocked the attack, lifting up both his hands to do so.

‘Damn, this hit is heavy, it really does feel like I’m getting hit by the Dalki.’ Quinn thought, but had successfully protected Eno.

“What are you doing Quinn, after everything I have done to help you!” Logan shouted. “Why are you getting in my way, didn’t you say you would help me?”

Honestly, Quinn didn't even know what he was doing. When he saw Logan attack he felt like he should have stopped it and he did.

"Logan, think about it, this isn't like you at all. You never usually act on emotion but probability, correct? So think about it, what are the chances that Eno is really the one that killed your parents. Can you be hundred percent sure it is him?" He asked.

"I can answer that for you." Eno said, putting his hand on Quinn's shoulder. "Thanks for taking that hit for me, it would have left quite the bruise if you didn't. I didn't realise you cared for me that much."

Hearing this, Quinn wished he would have just let Logan punch him up a couple of times before stepping in to stop him.

"I didn't kill your parents. The Green family has been supporting me during my entire lifetime, I'm sure you know. I was the one that had given them their power and in return they were to help me."

Now Logan was sure of it, this man really was Eno because he would be the only one that knew about this fact. Unless of course Quinn had told him, but why would he have done that?

"I am deeply sorry for what happened to them. I should have kept a better eye on them. Both your parents were smart people, I'm sure they knew they were in trouble. I thought if they did they would have tried to seek me out before anything had happened, but for some reason they never did."

Hearing this as an answer, Logan stood there not really knowing how to feel. This was the person his parents had told him to seek if he was in trouble, but now that he had finally met him, the only words he can say is sorry.

'What did I really expect though.' Logan started to think. 'That he would bring them back, was I hoping he was my parents' killer so I could exact revenge?'

It was then that Logan realised he didn't really know the answer he was looking for. This whole time he was just following his parents wishes and directing his anger at Eno, but now, he was completely lost.

'No, I can't just take what this person says as the truth. We know nothing about him. My parents might have trusted him, but they are dead because they did. I will learn and find out everything about him.' Logan thought, as he turned around and could see him walking ahead.

"Logan, if you need to speak anytime, please come and see me." Quinn said. "I am always on your side, and I have never forgotten how much you have helped me. No matter how busy I am, there will always be time for you." Quinn said.

Walking ahead, Logan wiped his face, he wasn't sure if he had shed tears or not, but did so out of reaction.

"Wait Quinn!" Logan shouted. "I'm coming with you, just for the time being. I also need to make sure it's a hundred percent not this man, and if it is, I will be sure to let you know first." Logan said. He would not make the same mistakes his parents did of trusting this man or putting the lives of his friends with this man.

Following behind, the three of them continued to walk forward and finally had entered the classroom where Borden could be seen with the kids, along with another person Quinn didn't quite recognise, but they were busy teaching the kids math.

'Well, I'm glad they found someone normal to teach them.' Quinn thought.

They saw Brock sitting at the back of the class in a seat with his arms folded. He was still wearing his butler uniform, and next to him, sitting at the very back was Sil as well. He was sat upright but his eyes didn't seem to be focusing on the lesson at all, they looked a little hollow.

As soon as Eno entered the room, Brock shot up like a rocket and gave a bow.

"Master, it is a relief to see you in such good health." Brock said.

At the same time, for a second Sil's eyes lit up as he saw Quinn, but soon they seemed to die down again, as if he was lost in his own head. It felt like not even he could cheer up or get through to Sil anymore.

'Did going to school really make him worse? I guess it was going to school and then taking him out of it.'

After exiting out of the room, Borden had decided to come along with them and instead of looking at Sil, Eno's eyes couldn't stop looking at the short man who had hopped on top of Logan's shoulder.

"Hey, why does that man keep staring at me?" Borden whispered inside Logan's ear.

"It's because you." Eno said, not taking his eyes off Broden. "You should be dead." Eno said.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– You should be dead

When getting off the ship, some of the others thought they might have some time to rest. Even though they had slept on the ship it wasn't the same, their bodies were sore and their minds still weren't prepared for what was about to happen.

However, Eno seemed to be ready for action as soon as they had landed.

"Do not worry, you guys can relax for a bit. I can take care of Eno while he is here." Quinn said. "Besides, I'm sure the rest of you have some important things to do, we don't all need to be keeping an eye on him twenty four seven."

Although Quinn said this, a lot of them felt too uncomfortable leaving a stranger in the Cursed ship, especially one that was a vampire. However, whatever Quinn wanted they would do so and Quinn was right, they did all have their own things to do.

Now that war had started, some wanted to contact their parents and get them to move from whatever planet they were on and have them come on board the Cursed ship, where they believed it was the safest place for them to be.

“Correction, you don’t need to keep an eye on me at all. I won’t cause the crew any trouble, I want everyone to do things how they would do as if I wasn’t here. Remember, I am here to observe just how great the Cursed faction is, I don’t want you to put on an act.” Eno said.

Sam gave Quinn another look, trying to see if he was really okay leaving the two of them alone. Eno hadn;t exactly been staying out of trouble, but was being nothing but trouble so far.

“It’s easier this way, I wanted to get straight down to business.” Quinn replied. “I had my rest at the school, so don’t worry too much about me.”

Even though Quinn reassured him, Sam was worried. Also what type of rest was Quinn even talking about? While at school he had run into so many troubles and even was in the middle of a fight with deadly Dalki, if anything he should be the most tired out of all of them.

Still, Sam couldn’t babysit Eno all the time, and there probably weren’t many on the ship that could either, so he thought this might actually be the best course of action if he and Quinn were together all the time.

‘I just hope those two don’t get into some type of huge argument.’ Sam thought, leaving the two on their own.

As the group split off to do their own thing, Quinn went ahead in order to look for Sil, getting straight down to business.

‘I wonder how Sil has been since he was sent back?’ Quinn thought.

Remembering that he was a bit unstable, but it was the only thing he could do at the time.

However, while on his way to the school centre on the ship, where he thought Sil would be, he could see a small boy running towards them out of breath.

He had his hands on his knees and was gasping for air, it was clear the person didn't do much physical activity often.

"You...You...your Eno!" The boy said, lifting up his head, and Quinn could see that the person who he thought was a young boy, was actually Logan.

"Ah, I know you. You are the one from the Green family, correct? Brock has been keeping quite the eye on you and your development has been exceptional." Eno said, looking at the boy with a smile, but Logn wasn't smiling back.

Now that Logan was looking up at him, the person he had been looking for this whole time, he had frozen. His mouth was twitching but the questions just wouldn't come out, until, he eventually said a few words.

"My...My parents...did you kill them?" Logan eventually managed to stutter out.

Eno then knelt down to eye level with Logan and looked him in the eye.

"Tell me. If I said I did, what would you do?" Eno taunted him.

Quinn knew all about the situation with Logan's family, their past and their history with vampires. He was now wondering what the hell Eno was doing, saying these words.

What happened next, Quinn didn't expect at all. Logan swung his right hand out, it was his new Dalki hand that was encased in a special metallic material in order to cover it up. However, as soon as Quinn saw the movement from Logan, he didn't know why but he had moved forward.

His body stepped in front of Eno and he had blocked the attack, lifting up both his hands to do so.

'Damn, this hit is heavy, it really does feel like I'm getting hit by the Dalki.' Quinn thought, but had successfully protected Eno.

"What are you doing Quinn, after everything I have done to help you!" Logan shouted. "Why are you getting in my way, didn't you say you would help me?"

Honestly, Quinn didn't even know what he was doing. When he saw Logan attack he felt like he should have stopped it and he did.

"Logan, think about it, this isn't like you at all. You never usually act on emotion but probability, correct? So think about it, what are the chances that Eno is really the one that killed your parents. Can you be hundred percent sure it is him?" He asked.

"I can answer that for you." Eno said, putting his hand on Quinn's shoulder. "Thanks for taking that hit for me, it would have left quite the bruise if you didn't. I didn't realise you cared for me that much."

Hearing this, Quinn wished he would have just let Logan punch him up a couple of times before stepping in to stop him.

"I didn't kill your parents. The Green family has been supporting me during my entire lifetime, I'm sure you know. I was the one that had given them their power and in return they were to help me."

Now Logan was sure of it, this man really was Eno because he would be the only one that knew about this fact. Unless of course Quinn had told him, but why would he have done that?

"I am deeply sorry for what happened to them. I should have kept a better eye on them. Both your parents were smart people, I'm sure they knew they were in trouble. I thought if they did they would have tried to seek me out before anything had happened, but for some reason they never did."

Hearing this as an answer, Logan stood there not really knowing how to feel. This was the person his parents had told him to seek if he was in trouble, but now that he had finally met him, the only words he can say is sorry.

'What did I really expect though.' Logan started to think. 'That he would bring them back, was I hoping he was my parents' killer so I could exact revenge?'

It was then that Logan realised he didn't really know the answer he was looking for. This whole time he was just following his parents wishes and directing his anger at Eno, but now, he was completely lost.

'No, I can't just take what this person says as the truth. We know nothing about him. My parents might have trusted him, but they are dead because they did. I will learn and find out everything about him.' Logan thought, as he turned around and could see him walking ahead.

"Logan, if you need to speak anytime, please come and see me." Quinn said. "I am always on your side, and I have never forgotten how much you have helped me. No matter how busy I am, there will always be time for you." Quinn said.

Walking ahead, Logan wiped his face, he wasn't sure if he had shed tears or not, but did so out of reaction.

"Wait Quinn!" Logan shouted. "I'm coming with you, just for the time being. I also need to make sure it's a hundred percent not this man, and if it is, I will be sure to let you know first." Logan said. He would not make the same mistakes his parents did of trusting this man or putting the lives of his friends with this man.

Following behind, the three of them continued to walk forward and finally had entered the classroom where Borden could be seen with the kids, along with another person Quinn didn't quite recognise, but they were busy teaching the kids math.

'Well, I'm glad they found someone normal to teach them.' Quinn thought.

They saw Brock sitting at the back of the class in a seat with his arms folded. He was still wearing his butler uniform, and next to him, sitting at the very back was Sil as well. He was sat upright but his eyes didn't seem to be focusing on the lesson at all, they looked a little hollow.

As soon as Eno entered the room, Brock shot up like a rocket and gave a bow.

"Master, it is a relief to see you in such good health." Brock said.

At the same time, for a second Sil's eyes lit up as he saw Quinn, but soon they seemed to die down again, as if he was lost in his own head. It felt like not even he could cheer up or get through to Sil anymore.

'Did going to school really make him worse? I guess it was going to school and then taking him out of it.'

After exiting out of the room, Borden had decided to come along with them and instead of looking at Sil, Eno's eyes couldn't stop looking at the short man who had hopped on top of Logan's shoulder.

"Hey, why does that man keep staring at me?" Borden whispered inside Logan's ear.

"It's because you." Eno said, not taking his eyes off Broden. "You should be dead." Eno said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1034

– The real Eno

Everyone standing in the hallway just outside the kids' classroom had a knee jerk reaction to what Eno had just said. Apart from Brock that was, who kept his hands behind his back and was just keeping an eye on everyone's movements.

"Hey, who the hell is this guy saying I should be dead!" Borden said. He was so angry that he had jumped up and down on Logan's shoulder but was careful not to use his strength.

Honestly, he wasn't the only one upset by the words, Sil had a brief reaction, as did Logan. For Quinn, he was starting to get used to Eno just saying what was on his mind without thinking of the consequences, and he was also starting to think his words weren't so serious, that he was just trying to stir up trouble in the Cursed faction.

If Quinn really thought what he said was true, and Eno was anyone else, Quinn would have reacted as well, and not in a small way either. Borden had been a great help in saving Fex, helping on the Blade island to save Sil, and even himself. Quinn owed Borden a lot and for someone to insult him in front of him, that wasn't on.

'Quinn,' Vincent called out to him. 'You might already know this, since you haven't said anything, but I believe that Eno is trying to test the Cursed factions bond. Your group has come together in strange ways and haven't exactly been together long. Maybe he is trying to test your group.'

Even if this was true, Quinn thought this wasn't the right way to be doing it. He did say he would just be observing for a while, he certainly didn't mention anything about causing friction on the ship.

"I'm just saying what will eventually happen to him." Eno replied. "The Dalki race is something that needs to be exterminated at all costs. If you knew what I knew, I'm sure you would all be thinking the same way. Not a single one of them can live, and that includes this one." He pointed at Borden.

"I'm actually surprised you could even have a Dalki on board this ship, how do you trust him?"

After hearing what Vincent had said, Quinn managed to keep himself quite calm. After observing his actions it really did seem like Eno was only doing this to ruffle up some feathers.

'Also, why don't you just tell me what you know about the Dalki then?' Quinn thought.

"Shut up!" Sil shouted. "Who are you? Why would you say that to him. Borden is like a brother to me!" Sil shouted.

It was surprising but it was actually the first time Sil had spoken since he had gotten back to the Cursed ship from the school. Before being sent to school there were two people that Sil could interact with, one of them being Quinn, and the other one being Borden.

“Eno, how can you even question our group when you know nothing about us.” Logan said. “You might think you know everything due to watching us from behind the scenes, but not everything can be sorted into groups and piles of information.”

Sil had stepped forward and looked like he was about to do something he may later regret, but before he could, Brock had stopped him.

“I understand how you feel, young master.” Brock said, speaking to Sil. “However, Eno was just pointing out a decision that you might have to come across in the future. Of course you will have to face the decision and he is not forcing this decision upon you, only prompting you to think.” Brock tried to explain and be the moderator in the midst of it all.

However, Brock’s words seemed to fall upon deaf ears as Sil was still breathing heavily. Seeing this, Quinn thought he was about to act out and who knew what abilities he had and didn’t have at this moment.

“Sil, this man might be able to bring back Vorden and Raten.” Quinn eventually said.

Out of all the things, this had gotten through to Sil the most. His heavy breathing had stopped, and he looked at the man differently. “Really..” Sil spoke quietly.

Even Borden, who was still angry at Eno, was happy that perhaps the one who he deemed as his real brother, could be returning.

—

There was silence between the whole group as they moved from the hall to one of the training rooms. There were a few people inside, and when Quinn entered they all congratulated him. Quinn asked them nicely to leave the room for the time being and of course they obliged, heading to one of the other rooms.

The boys were all standing next to Sil, checking if he was okay and he seemed to be, as he continued to stare at Eno.

Eno and Brock appeared to be discussing something together once in the room. Quinn found it strange while looking at the two of them, he couldn't hear what they were saying. He didn't realise it at first because they were standing quite far away and seemed to be whispering. In the past, even if people were whispering, Quinn's s.e.n.s.i.t.i.v.e ears should have been able to pick it up, but he couldn't.

'Is this a type of skill, or something to do with Eno?' Quinn thought.

After their discussion had ended, Eno walked up to the rest of the group along with Brock who was by his side.

"Brock has explained to me and caught me up with what has happened. I already knew of some of your situation but now I understand it a bit more. Still, I'm sure Brock has already explained to your group what we wish Sil to do."

This was what Quinn and the others had expected Eno would do, he needed Sil and his ability to move the demon tier beast and he wouldn't bring back Raten and Vorden until Sil did his task for him.

"Because of this, I want Sil to first agree to help us with our task. I don't want to force the boy and I am a fair person. A favour for a favour." Eno said.

This had come as a surprise, Quinn hadn't expected this but he was a bit annoyed, wasn't this his favour to help Sil? And now he was getting Sil to do another favour for him in return.

Before Quinn could even voice his concern though, Sil had nodded immediately.

"I will go through anything to bring them both back." Sil agreed.

Still, it was unclear if Eno would keep his side of the bargain after Sil had done the favour.

"Now, just be patient. I just need to touch your head for a second." Eno said as he walked forward.

Quinn found this a bit weird, but didn't think much would happen.

'Quinn, I think that's the real Eno that is on board the ship right now.' Vincent suddenly said.

'What do you mean?' Quinn thought.

Due to Eno claiming that the one he was speaking to before in the desert wasn't the real Eno, Quinn assumed this one wasn't the real one either.

'Because right now, by touching Vorden's head he is activating part of his ability.' Vincent replied.

A few seconds later, Eno had let go of Sil's head and had a concerned look on his face.

"Is that it!" Sil said in an excited voice. "Are they back, Vorden, Raten!" He called out, but he couldn't hear or see anything.

"It won't be that easy." Eno replied. "The conditions to bring back the other two are a little difficult." Eno explained. "I will present to you two options in order to bring your friends back and it is up to you which one you choose.

"Many of you may not know this but I will let you in on a little secret. The abilities that humans have learnt, nearly all of them in our current world have descended from one thing, a giant stone tablet. I have investigated this tablet and I am not sure how it really works but, when it finds someone suitable and deems it necessary, the ability will be passed on to a human.

"When one dies with their ability, it returns back to the tablet and will only leave once again once it finds someone suitable. If the tablet still has not found someone then the ability can very well still be in the tablet. If so, then I will be able to give it to someone with no ability.

"For this to work though, you would first need to go to the tablet, and secondly find someone with no ability. I did the same thing for the Green family long ago, so I have done this before." Eno stated.

Quinn knew what the problem was straight away, the tablet was on the Blade island and they didn't know if the Hilston family still occupied it, or if the dragon was there. While there, it was most likely Eno would want them to move the dragon first.

"I'm sure you already know the problems with this by the look on your faces, and now I actually plan to bring back the other two before asking Sil to complete my request. After all, what if I was to fail?" Eno stated.

'Did he just say to bring them back, before Sil was to help him with his request?'

"Wait, Eno." Quinn said. "I'm sure you know this and I don't want to stop you from helping Sil, but I also don't want you to bite us back later. When Raten and Vorden were in Sil's mind, he was only able to copy three abilities at one time, it wouldn't be enough to move the demon tier beast."

Sil thought about this as well and so did the others, which was why they thought that Sil would have to complete his favour first.

"Who said I would be bringing them back into Sil's mind?" Eno answered.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

∴ .

– The real Eno

Everyone standing in the hallway just outside the kids' classroom had a knee jerk reaction to what Eno had just said. Apart from Brock that was, who kept his hands behind his back and was just keeping an eye on everyone's movements.

“Hey, who the hell is this guy saying I should be dead!” Borden said. He was so angry that he had jumped up and down on Logan’s shoulder but was careful not to use his strength.

Honestly, he wasn’t the only one upset by the words, Sil had a brief reaction, as did Logan. For Quinn, he was starting to get used to Eno just saying what was on his mind without thinking of the consequences, and he was also starting to think his words weren’t so serious, that he was just trying to stir up trouble in the Cursed faction.

If Quinn really thought what he said was true, and Eno was anyone else, Quinn would have reacted as well, and not in a small way either. Borden had been a great help in saving Fex, helping on the Blade island to save Sil, and even himself. Quinn owed Borden a lot and for someone to insult him in front of him, that wasn’t on.

‘Quinn,’ Vincent called out to him. ‘You might already know this, since you haven’t said anything, but I believe that Eno is trying to test the Cursed factions bond. Your group has come together in strange ways and haven’t exactly been together long. Maybe he is trying to test your group.’

Even if this was true, Quinn thought this wasn’t the right way to be doing it. He did say he would just be observing for a while, he certainly didn’t mention anything about causing friction on the ship.

“I’m just saying what will eventually happen to him.” Eno replied. “The Dalki race is something that needs to be exterminated at all costs. If you knew what I knew, I’m sure you would all be thinking the same way. Not a single one of them can live, and that includes this one.” He pointed at Borden.

“I’m actually surprised you could even have a Dalki on board this ship, how do you trust him?”

After hearing what Vincent had said, Quinn managed to keep himself quite calm. After observing his actions it really did seem like Eno was only doing this to ruffle up some feathers.

‘Also, why don’t you just tell me what you know about the Dalki then?’ Quinn thought.

“Shut up!” Sil shouted. “Who are you? Why would you say that to him. Borden is like a brother to me!” Sil shouted.

It was surprising but it was actually the first time Sil had spoken since he had gotten back to the Cursed ship from the school. Before being sent to school there were two people that Sil could interact with, one of them being Quinn, and the other one being Borden.

“Eno, how can you even question our group when you know nothing about us.” Logan said. “You might think you know everything due to watching us from behind the scenes, but not everything can be sorted into groups and piles of information.”

Sil had stepped forward and looked like he was about to do something he may later regret, but before he could, Brock had stopped him.

“I understand how you feel, young master.” Brock said, speaking to Sil. “However, Eno was just pointing out a decision that you might have to come across in the future. Of course you will have to face the decision and he is not forcing this decision upon you, only prompting you to think.” Brock tried to explain and be the moderator in the midst of it all.

However, Brock’s words seemed to fall upon deaf ears as Sil was still breathing heavily. Seeing this, Quinn thought he was about to act out and who knew what abilities he had and didn’t have at this moment.

“Sil, this man might be able to bring back Vorden and Raten.” Quinn eventually said.

Out of all the things, this had gotten through to Sil the most. His heavy breathing had stopped, and he looked at the man differently. “Really..” Sil spoke quietly.

Even Borden, who was still angry at Eno, was happy that perhaps the one who he deemed as his real brother, could be returning.

—

There was silence between the whole group as they moved from the hall to one of the training rooms. There were a few people inside, and when Quinn entered they all congratulated him. Quinn asked them nicely to leave the room for the time being and of course they obliged, heading to one of the other rooms.

The boys were all standing next to Sil, checking if he was okay and he seemed to be, as he continued to stare at Eno.

Eno and Brock appeared to be discussing something together once in the room. Quinn found it strange while looking at the two of them, he couldn't hear what they were saying. He didn't realise it at first because they were standing quite far away and seemed to be whispering. In the past, even if people were whispering, Quinn's s.e.n.s.i.t.i.v.e ears should have been able to pick it up, but he couldn't.

'Is this a type of skill, or something to do with Eno?' Quinn thought.

After their discussion had ended, Eno walked up to the rest of the group along with Brock who was by his side.

"Brock has explained to me and caught me up with what has happened. I already knew of some of your situation but now I understand it a bit more. Still, I'm sure Brock has already explained to your group what we wish Sil to do."

This was what Quinn and the others had expected Eno would do, he needed Sil and his ability to move the demon tier beast and he wouldn't bring back Raten and Vorden until Sil did his task for him.

"Because of this, I want Sil to first agree to help us with our task. I don't want to force the boy and I am a fair person. A favour for a favour." Eno said.

This had come as a surprise, Quinn hadn't expected this but he was a bit annoyed, wasn't this his favour to help Sil? And now he was getting Sil to do another favour for him in return.

Before Quinn could even voice his concern though, Sil had nodded immediately.

"I will go through anything to bring them both back." Sil agreed.

Still, it was unclear if Eno would keep his side of the bargain after Sil had done the favour.

“Now, just be patient. I just need to touch your head for a second.” Eno said as he walked forward.

Quinn found this a bit weird, but didn't think much would happen.

‘Quinn, I think that's the real Eno that is on board the ship right now.’ Vincent suddenly said.

‘What do you mean?’ Quinn thought.

Due to Eno claiming that the one he was speaking to before in the desert wasn't the real Eno, Quinn assumed this one wasn't the real one either.

‘Because right now, by touching Vorden's head he is activating part of his ability.’ Vincent replied.

A few seconds later, Eno had let go of Sil's head and had a concerned look on his face.

“Is that it!” Sil said in an excited voice. “Are they back, Vorden, Raten!” He called out, but he couldn't hear or see anything.

“It won't be that easy.” Eno replied. “The conditions to bring back the other two are a little difficult.” Eno explained. “I will present to you two options in order to bring your friends back and it is up to you which one you choose.

“Many of you may not know this but I will let you in on a little secret. The abilities that humans have learnt, nearly all of them in our current world have descended from one thing, a giant stone tablet. I have investigated this tablet and I am not sure how it really works but, when it finds someone suitable and deems it necessary, the ability will be passed on to a human.

“When one dies with their ability, it returns back to the tablet and will only leave once again once it finds someone suitable. If the tablet still has not found someone then the ability can very well still be in the tablet. If so, then I will be able to give it to someone with no ability.

“For this to work though, you would first need to go to the tablet, and secondly find someone with no ability. I did the same thing for the Green family long ago, so I have done this before.” Eno stated.

Quinn knew what the problem was straight away, the tablet was on the Blade island and they didn't know if the Hilston family still occupied it, or if the dragon was there. While there, it was most likely Eno would want them to move the dragon first.

“I'm sure you already know the problems with this by the look on your faces, and now I actually plan to bring back the other two before asking Sil to complete my request. After all, what if I was to fail?” Eno stated.

‘Did he just say to bring them back, before Sil was to help him with his request?’

“Wait, Eno.” Quinn said. “I'm sure you know this and I don't want to stop you from helping Sil, but I also don't want you to bite us back later. When Raten and Vorden were in Sil's mind, he was only able to copy three abilities at one time, it wouldn't be enough to move the demon tier beast.”

Sil thought about this as well and so did the others, which was why they thought that Sil would have to complete his favour first.

“Who said I would be bringing them back into Sil's mind?” Eno answered.

My Vampire System Chapter 1035

– Another option

If Eno was planning to bring back Vorden and Raten and not by bringing them back into Sil's mind, Quinn and the others were starting to think of what Eno was exactly planning to do. That's when it hit them, that maybe Eno already had something in mind.

After talking to Fex, and learning of what happened to Innu before Quinn had arrived to the others on the desert that day. Quinn realised that just as Eno had said, three people that looked identical to him had appeared in front of each of them.

At first, Quinn thought maybe they were using an ability of some sort, but it seemed to be something beyond that,

‘Does that mean that Eno is able to create clones, or something similar with his ability?’ Quinn thought. It certainly wasn’t out of the realm of possibility. After all, Borden was created and he was nearly an identical copy of Vorden before he transformed into a Dalki and used up all his power.

Also, the Dalki were created trying to find a replacement for their blood source problem, and sometime later, the vampires eventually managed to create a blood replacement. However, Quinn never found out how that replacement was made exactly. When using his inspect skill though, a lot of the blood was sourced from the same people.

Thinking about his led him to another thought. At one point and time, when Quinn was trapped in one of the labs that he assumed was owned by Eno, there were human body parts that were used to feed the Wendigos. When they went up through the caves above they had discovered a large glass container which contained countless human bodies, yet all of them looked similar to each other.

‘Were they all clones as well?!’ Quinn thought. ‘Is that how the vampires are able to get a constant blood supply without having to rely on the humans anymore?’

This in itself was a scary thought, and Quinn thought surely there had to be a downside to using clones that Eno was perhaps not telling him. Just like there was a problem with the Dalki.

“Are you talking about, creating bodies for the two of them?” Logan was the one who had eventually asked, thinking along the same lines as Quinn.

“That is certainly one option, but if you were to obtain the ability you wouldn’t even need to do that, you would just need to have two empty bodies prepared, or they don’t even have to be empty. Just move their minds to somewhere else and place the others in the other bodies instead. Although, b.a.r.e in mind that the new bodies cells would be different. So if you wanted them to have the same ability as before, they would have to have no abilities or have already learnt the abilities,” Eno explained.

Quinn didn’t know why, but going down this path seemed like quite the dark one, and it just sounded like there were too many risks on top of risks. Essentially in the first place they would need at least three

people, possibly five. One person who would obtain the mind swapping ability, and then two bodies to move Vorden and Raten into, while moving the other minds out of that body.

“Wait a second.” Quinn said, “Earlier you said that there were two options, what about the second option?”

“The first option doesn’t require me to use much of my ability which is why for me it’s less trouble, but the second option isn’t easy either. There is actually no need to obtain the ability at all. I am able to use my own ability to transfer both Vorden and Raten out of Sil, if they are still there.

“However, with my ability there is a cost, and that cost is either two Demi god tier beast crystals, or another Demon tier beast crystal.” Said Eno.

“But even if we don’t have someone learn the ability, does that mean you would have to prepare two bodies for them to be transferred into?” Quinn asked.

“Correct.” Eno replied.

After learning of the two options, if they wanted to attempt to solve the problem quickly the first option was a good one for them. However, they needed someone to learn the ability from the tablet, but who would be loyal enough to help them and had no ability,

It was Rare for a.d.u.l.ts apart from those from Pure to not have an ability. Then a certain student came into his mind.

‘Shiro...but could I really do that to him? I could always give him the option.’

Even if Shiro accepted Quinn’s request, he didn’t want to force it upon him on top of that there was still the problem of where the tablet was. It was on the Balde island, and there was a huge risk the Balde’s were still there.

“Let me think about this for a little while.” Quinn said.

It was getting late, and it was a decision that needed to be slept on.

“If you speak to Sam, I’m sure he will have a room and place for you to rest for the night.” Quinn said, and both Brock and Eno were ready to head off, but before they left the room, Eno turned around to say one last thing.

“Quinn, I am a man of my word, I understand that your favour has turned into Sil’s favour, so feel free to ask me for anything that you might need.” Eno said leaving the room.

“Quinn, do you really trust him? I know you were thinking what I was thinking.” Logan said. “It seems like Eno had the ability to also create clones. We’re not sure how this works, and I’m also not sure if Eno plans to include this in his deal to help Sil, or if we requested bodies from him he would ask for something else.

“I’ll take a look into what I can do in terms of that situation as well, but it might be best that I head back to the vampire world to find out more at the lab.” Logan suggested.

“No, I don’t want you to go to the vampire world for the time being. Not without me anyway.” Quinn replied. “Not when the Dalki war has already started, I’m sure that Arthur is planning to make his move and I don’t want anyone to be caught up in the middle of that.

“I think for now, we shouldn’t worry about the ‘bodies that are required’. I’ll ask Sam to see if he can send a scout team to the Blade island, to see if the Blades are still there. For now, I think we should get everything that is needed to set up the transfer then we can decide.

“Besides, even if we don’t use the Demon tier or Demi-god beast crystals we can still use them for other things, so it won’t be a waste of our time, and we will need to check out the Blade island anyway, if Eno is planning to use Sil to move the beast.”

Looking at Sil, Quinn could tell he was frustrated. An impatient person that just wanted to bring RAten and Vorden back. He was quite surprised that Sil didn’t say anything during the whole conversation, but Quinn knew what Sil was like.

If it was for Vorden and Raten he would do anything, which meant he didn't care about the lives, or bodies of the people Raten and Vorden would live in if he got to see them again.

"Sil, you just need to wait a little longer. We need to make sure that Vorden and Raten can return safe and sound." Said Quinn. "If we get the ability, then we don't have to worry too much, we can always keep moving them..."

When Quinn said this, something struck him, a third option that Eno didn't think was possible, something that didn't require extra bodies and would keep Sil's powers.

'But will it work? I just hope Vorden and Raten don't mind what I'm thinking of doing.' Quinn thought.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Another option

If Eno was planning to bring back Vorden and Raten and not by bringing them back into Sil's mind, Quinn and the others were starting to think of what Eno was exactly planning to do. That's when it hit them, that maybe Eno already had something in mind.

After talking to Fex, and learning of what happened to Innu before Quinn had arrived to the others on the desert that day. Quinn realised that just as Eno had said, three people that looked identical to him had appeared in front of each of them.

At first, Quinn thought maybe they were using an ability of some sort, but it seemed to be something beyond that,

‘Does that mean that Eno is able to create clones, or something similar with his ability?’ Quinn thought. It certainly wasn’t out of the realm of possibility. After all, Borden was created and he was nearly an identical copy of Vorden before he transformed into a Dalki and used up all his power.

Also, the Dalki were created trying to find a replacement for their blood source problem, and sometime later, the vampires eventually managed to create a blood replacement. However, Quinn never found out how that replacement was made exactly. When using his inspect skill though, a lot of the blood was sourced from the same people.

Thinking about his led him to another thought. At one point and time, when Quinn was trapped in one of the labs that he assumed was owned by Eno, there were human body parts that were used to feed the Wendigos. When they went up through the caves above they had discovered a large glass container which contained countless human bodies, yet all of them looked similar to each other.

‘Were they all clones as well?!’ Quinn thought. ‘Is that how the vampires are able to get a constant blood supply without having to rely on the humans anymore?’

This in itself was a scary thought, and Quinn thought surely there had to be a downside to using clones that Eno was perhaps not telling him. Just like there was a problem with the Dalki.

“Are you talking about, creating bodies for the two of them?” Logan was the one who had eventually asked, thinking along the same lines as Quinn.

“That is certainly one option, but if you were to obtain the ability you wouldn’t even need to do that, you would just need to have two empty bodies prepared, or they don’t even have to be empty. Just move their minds to somewhere else and place the others in the other bodies instead. Although, b.a.r.e in mind that the new bodies cells would be different. So if you wanted them to have the same ability as before, they would have to have no abilities or have already learnt the abilities,” Eno explained.

Quinn didn’t know why, but going down this path seemed like quite the dark one, and it just sounded like there were too many risks on top of risks. Essentially in the first place they would need at least three

people, possibly five. One person who would obtain the mind swapping ability, and then two bodies to move Vorden and Raten into, while moving the other minds out of that body.

“Wait a second.” Quinn said, “Earlier you said that there were two options, what about the second option?”

“The first option doesn’t require me to use much of my ability which is why for me it’s less trouble, but the second option isn’t easy either. There is actually no need to obtain the ability at all. I am able to use my own ability to transfer both Vorden and Raten out of Sil, if they are still there.

“However, with my ability there is a cost, and that cost is either two Demi god tier beast crystals, or another Demon tier beast crystal.” Said Eno.

“But even if we don’t have someone learn the ability, does that mean you would have to prepare two bodies for them to be transferred into?” Quinn asked.

“Correct.” Eno replied.

After learning of the two options, if they wanted to attempt to solve the problem quickly the first option was a good one for them. However, they needed someone to learn the ability from the tablet, but who would be loyal enough to help them and had no ability,

It was Rare for a.d.u.l.ts apart from those from Pure to not have an ability. Then a certain student came into his mind.

‘Shiro...but could I really do that to him? I could always give him the option.’

Even if Shiro accepted Quinn’s request, he didn’t want to force it upon him on top of that there was still the problem of where the tablet was. It was on the Balde island, and there was a huge risk the Balde’s were still there.

“Let me think about this for a little while.” Quinn said.

It was getting late, and it was a decision that needed to be slept on.

“If you speak to Sam, I’m sure he will have a room and place for you to rest for the night.” Quinn said, and both Brock and Eno were ready to head off, but before they left the room, Eno turned around to say one last thing.

“Quinn, I am a man of my word, I understand that your favour has turned into Sil’s favour, so feel free to ask me for anything that you might need.” Eno said leaving the room.

“Quinn, do you really trust him? I know you were thinking what I was thinking.” Logan said. “It seems like Eno had the ability to also create clones. We’re not sure how this works, and I’m also not sure if Eno plans to include this in his deal to help Sil, or if we requested bodies from him he would ask for something else.

“I’ll take a look into what I can do in terms of that situation as well, but it might be best that I head back to the vampire world to find out more at the lab.” Logan suggested.

“No, I don’t want you to go to the vampire world for the time being. Not without me anyway.” Quinn replied. “Not when the Dalki war has already started, I’m sure that Arthur is planning to make his move and I don’t want anyone to be caught up in the middle of that.

“I think for now, we shouldn’t worry about the ‘bodies that are required’. I’ll ask Sam to see if he can send a scout team to the Blade island, to see if the Blades are still there. For now, I think we should get everything that is needed to set up the transfer then we can decide.

“Besides, even if we don’t use the Demon tier or Demi-god beast crystals we can still use them for other things, so it won’t be a waste of our time, and we will need to check out the Blade island anyway, if Eno is planning to use Sil to move the beast.”

Looking at Sil, Quinn could tell he was frustrated. An impatient person that just wanted to bring RAten and Vorden back. He was quite surprised that Sil didn’t say anything during the whole conversation, but Quinn knew what Sil was like.

If it was for Vorden and Raten he would do anything, which meant he didn't care about the lives, or bodies of the people Raten and Vorden would live in if he got to see them again.

"Sil, you just need to wait a little longer. We need to make sure that Vorden and Raten can return safe and sound." Said Quinn. "If we get the ability, then we don't have to worry too much, we can always keep moving them...."

When Quinn said this, something struck him, a third option that Eno didn't think was possible, something that didn't require extra bodies and would keep Sil's powers.

'But will it work? I just hope Vorden and Raten don't mind what I'm thinking of doing.' Quinn thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1036

– Making a deal everywhere

Quinn wanted to act without Eno knowing what he had planned for now, that way he couldn't play any of his games on him. At the same time, choosing either of the options relied on Eno quite a bit which Quinn didn't like.

Still, for his new plan to work there were many moving parts he would have to do himself, and he also needed to check if it was possible. Him and Logan would have to work closely on this one, while making it seem like Quinn had chosen one of the options for now.

As for Eno, he had been left to his own devices, allowing him to travel around the Cursed ship along with his 'friend' Brock. Although the relationship between the two still wasn't clear. The Cursed leaders apart from Megan who was still in the dark about the others' secrets, were to keep an eye on Eno when they could.

Although, ever since the broadcast, everywhere Eno went it was hard to not know where he was, for even the Cursed faction members wanted to talk to him and knew who he was.

When talking to the regular members on board, he had asked simple questions about the Cursed faction, such as when did they join and what do they think of the group. It didn't seem like he was stirring up trouble like with the main leaders.

After so much observing, they found out that Eno was really doing what he said, just wandering around and observing. Quinn couldn't stay with him forever so it was deemed fine to leave him alone.

Of course, one of the only reasons this was allowed was because of Logan, who had access to the cameras around the Cursed ship, and also had one of his small spiders following Eno at all times, but he wasn't an idiot. He knew most likely Eno and Brock had an idea they were being followed, and could turn off or interfere with his equipment.

Eno was one of the few smart people who could actually go against Logan, but if anything strange did occur, then that would also be a sign and Quinn would be informed straight away.

Currently, Logan while working away on what Quinn had tasked him with, was watching what Eno was doing. The pair of goggles he would usually wear over his eyes while he did work, was showing a video feed that allowed Logan to see everything in the top left hand corner.

At the same time, he could concentrate on doing his work, and through his ability the spider would inform him if it thought it had seen anything suspicious as well, in case there were a few things he had missed.

As for what Eno was doing at this very moment, he had entered a training room that was producing noise even through the soundproof rooms. It was also clear that the other members of the Cursed faction were avoiding the room, so naturally Eno was interested.

When he entered the room along with Brock, the sound of constant clashes could be heard even clearer now, and in the training room, sparks were flying off while two swords were doing battle.

"Did you sense them?" Leo asked, as he continued his strike and it was blocked by Erin.

“Of course!” She shouted back, trying to swing a heavy strike of her own, but she was tired and overextended, allowing her body weight to shift for a brief second. Leo used this to move in and gave Erin a shoulder barge as she came in, knocking her to the ground.

Both of them were completely covered in sweat. For vampires, this was incredibly rare as it took a lot for them, based on how large their stamina was. Even when training, hardly anyone pushed their bodies to this point.

“Let’s stop for now.” Leo said, it wasn’t because their tank was empty, but he just didn’t like the fact that the guests were watching their every move, and Leo and Erin had some secrets they didn’t want to particularly share with outsiders.

“Oh, you two don’t have to stop just because we came in, it was just getting good.” Eno said with a smile. As the fight ended as well, Erin’s hair started to change back from the black colour going to its original blonde.

This was something that she had eventually learnt to control based on who she was around at the moment. However, when battling using certain strength it would change to black. Eno looked at this and it looked as if he wanted to say something but had decided not to.

“Brock.” Leo called out. “Is this the master that you spoke of before?”

“It is.” Brock replied.

Leo started to walk up to the two of them, and was cautious while Erin followed from behind.

“Although the two of us have not met, I hope I am not rude by requesting this.” Leo bowed. “I was hoping you could help me with some information.” Leo asked, looking towards Eno.

“Ah yes, Brock did inform me that someone was quite interested in Pure, I assume that you would be the one, but you must not know me very well and if you don’t you will do. I only tell people what I wish, if they are to do me a favour or have something that I want in return. An equivalent exchange.

“Information on the Pure leader’s appearance is very valuable information, which means you would owe me quite the big favour.” Eno said with a smile. “So I would be happy to tell you, as long as you comply with one of my requests.”

When looking at Eno, something was sending goosebumps inside Erin’s body. She didn’t like this person. She had felt this way when seeing someone else from the vampire world, which was Bryce. Someone who didn’t seem like an outright bad person, but it didn’t mean they weren’t a bad person.

“I’m sorry to hear that, but then I must decline,” Leo replied. “If it is information worth warranting a deal over, then perhaps I shouldn’t know about it in the first place.”

Brock could tell that his master was quite surprised by this person’s response. It was clear that Leo was very interested in knowing who the Pure leader was, but then why wouldn’t he attempt to make a deal?

“Maybe you can help me with another thing,” Leo said. “Perhaps you could inform me and tell me, who do you think is stronger? Surely you must know the Pure leader’s strength?”

“I would say I have a pretty good idea, but I do not know your strength so I would be unable to find out that answer.” Eno replied.

After that, Leo didn’t say anything else, and just decided to walk past Eno with Erin following behind him, leaving the room. For a second, Eno was left there in his own thoughts, thinking about what had just happened.

--

It followed him into his room and followed him everywhere, not noticing anything out of the ordinary, and Eno had gone to sleep.

Meanwhile, in the hallway itself, another figure that looked exactly like Eno was standing outside of a certain door.

'The Green boy is suspicious of me but I don't blame him. He is doing well and this is how he should act. However, he is unaware of what I can do, and that is where he will fail.'

Seemingly entering the room, he was silent, walking towards the bed. The person's blonde hair could be seen, trailing off her bed.

'A Dhampir is no one's friend. It might be better off to kill her now before she causes more trouble for everyone.' Eno thought.

Taking a step forward, his hand was glowing red, and his eyes at the same time, but he stopped. Almost hesitating with what to do.

'Should I really interfere? The Cursed faction has done well because of the group of people Quinn has managed to surround himself with. This may ruin everything.'

Letting the red aura go, Eno turned around, only to have a blade pointed towards his neck, and the one holding the sword was the bald blind man he had seen earlier.

"Maybe we will find out the answer to my question."

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Making a deal everywhere

Quinn wanted to act without Eno knowing what he had planned for now, that way he couldn't play any of his games on him. At the same time, choosing either of the options relied on Eno quite a bit which Quinn didn't like.

Still, for his new plan to work there were many moving parts he would have to do himself, and he also needed to check if it was possible. Him and Logan would have to work closely on this one, while making it seem like Quinn had chosen one of the options for now.

As for Eno, he had been left to his own devices, allowing him to travel around the Cursed ship along with his 'friend' Brock. Although the relationship between the two still wasn't clear. The Cursed leaders apart from Megan who was still in the dark about the others' secrets, were to keep an eye on Eno when they could.

Although, ever since the broadcast, everywhere Eno went it was hard to not know where he was, for even the Cursed faction members wanted to talk to him and knew who he was.

When talking to the regular members on board, he had asked simple questions about the Cursed faction, such as when did they join and what do they think of the group. It didn't seem like he was stirring up trouble like with the main leaders.

After so much observing, they found out that Eno was really doing what he said, just wandering around and observing. Quinn couldn't stay with him forever so it was deemed fine to leave him alone.

Of course, one of the only reasons this was allowed was because of Logan, who had access to the cameras around the Cursed ship, and also had one of his small spiders following Eno at all times, but he wasn't an idiot. He knew most likely Eno and Brock had an idea they were being followed, and could turn off or interfere with his equipment.

Eno was one of the few smart people who could actually go against Logan, but if anything strange did occur, then that would also be a sign and Quinn would be informed straight away.

Currently, Logan while working away on what Quinn had tasked him with, was watching what Eno was doing. The pair of goggles he would usually wear over his eyes while he did work, was showing a video feed that allowed Logan to see everything in the top left hand corner.

At the same time, he could concentrate on doing his work, and through his ability the spider would inform him if it thought it had seen anything suspicious as well, in case there were a few things he had missed.

As for what Eno was doing at this very moment, he had entered a training room that was producing noise even through the soundproof rooms. It was also clear that the other members of the Cursed faction were avoiding the room, so naturally Eno was interested.

When he entered the room along with Brock, the sound of constant clashes could be heard even clearer now, and in the training room, sparks were flying off while two swords were doing battle.

“Did you sense them?” Leo asked, as he continued his strike and it was blocked by Erin.

“Of course!” She shouted back, trying to swing a heavy strike of her own, but she was tired and overextended, allowing her body weight to shift for a brief second. Leo used this to move in and gave Erin a shoulder barge as she came in, knocking her to the ground.

Both of them were completely covered in sweat. For vampires, this was incredibly rare as it took a lot for them, based on how large their stamina was. Even when training, hardly anyone pushed their bodies to this point.

“Let’s stop for now.” Leo said, it wasn’t because their tank was empty, but he just didn’t like the fact that the guests were watching their every move, and Leo and Erin had some secrets they didn’t want to particularly share with outsiders.

“Oh, you two don’t have to stop just because we came in, it was just getting good.” Eno said with a smile. As the fight ended as well, Erin’s hair started to change back from the black colour going to its original blonde.

This was something that she had eventually learnt to control based on who she was around at the moment. However, when battling using certain strength it would change to black. Eno looked at this and it looked as if he wanted to say something but had decided not to.

“Brock.” Leo called out. “Is this the master that you spoke of before?”

“It is.” Brock replied.

Leo started to walk up to the two of them, and was cautious while Erin followed from behind.

“Although the two of us have not met, I hope I am not rude by requesting this.” Leo bowed. “I was hoping you could help me with some information.” Leo asked, looking towards Eno.

“Ah yes, Brock did inform me that someone was quite interested in Pure, I assume that you would be the one, but you must not know me very well and if you don’t you will do. I only tell people what I wish, if they are to do me a favour or have something that I want in return. An equivalent exchange.

“Information on the Pure leader’s appearance is very valuable information, which means you would owe me quite the big favour.” Eno said with a smile. “So I would be happy to tell you, as long as you comply with one of my requests.”

When looking at Eno, something was sending goosebumps inside Erin’s body. She didn’t like this person. She had felt this way when seeing someone else from the vampire world, which was Bryce. Someone who didn’t seem like an outright bad person, but it didn’t mean they weren’t a bad person.

“I’m sorry to hear that, but then I must decline,” Leo replied. “If it is information worth warranting a deal over, then perhaps I shouldn’t know about it in the first place.”

Brock could tell that his master was quite surprised by this person’s response. It was clear that Leo was very interested in knowing who the Pure leader was, but then why wouldn’t he attempt to make a deal?

“Maybe you can help me with another thing,” Leo said. “Perhaps you could inform me and tell me, who do you think is stronger? Surely you must know the Pure leader’s strength?”

“I would say I have a pretty good idea, but I do not know your strength so I would be unable to find out that answer.” Eno replied.

After that, Leo didn’t say anything else, and just decided to walk past Eno with Erin following behind him, leaving the room. For a second, Eno was left there in his own thoughts, thinking about what had just happened.

--

It followed him into his room and followed him everywhere, not noticing anything out of the ordinary, and Eno had gone to sleep.

Meanwhile, in the hallway itself, another figure that looked exactly like Eno was standing outside of a certain door.

'The Green boy is suspicious of me but I don't blame him. He is doing well and this is how he should act. However, he is unaware of what I can do, and that is where he will fail.'

Seemingly entering the room, he was silent, walking towards the bed. The person's blonde hair could be seen, trailing off her bed.

'A Dhampir is no one's friend. It might be better off to kill her now before she causes more trouble for everyone.' Eno thought.

Taking a step forward, his hand was glowing red, and his eyes at the same time, but he stopped. Almost hesitating with what to do.

'Should I really interfere? The Cursed faction has done well because of the group of people Quinn has managed to surround himself with. This may ruin everything.'

Letting the red aura go, Eno turned around, only to have a blade pointed towards his neck, and the one holding the sword was the bald blind man he had seen earlier.

"Maybe we will find out the answer to my question."

My Vampire System Chapter 1037

– Trapped between two

“I have to ask.” Eno said. “How did you know I would be here?”

With a blade pointed an inch away from Eno’s neck. He seemed pretty calm and it didn’t look like he was fazed at all. Judging by his aura, Leo could tell this as well.

“Was that a question?” Leo asked. “I thought you only answered questions if you got something in return. You seem to be quite the composed person but unfortunately for you, I can see more than others ever could with their eyes. For a brief moment, perhaps you didn’t react but your aura did when you saw Erin’s hair colour change.

“It is my duty to look after those in the Cursed family.”

“You have the right attitude to be a vampire knight. If you were a real vampire everyone would be fighting to have you as their knight.” Eno said. “It looks like Quinn has found a good one, but my question wasn’t directed towards you.”

At that moment, shadows started to disperse and another person was seen present in the room, and that was Quinn. He had been in the room from the very beginning and was ready to jump in to save Erin at any moment, but what had surprised him was Leo being there as well.

“Coming from someone who made those comments about Borden, I don’t see why you wouldn’t feel a similar way about Erin either. Besides, for someone who had put me through a pretty cruel test, do you think I would trust you on the ship so easily?” Quinn said.

It was at that moment that Eno realised that Quinn wasn’t as naive as he thought. He had given him an illusion that he was free to do as he wished while continuing to follow him.

“Congratulations, but what will you be doing to me now then, seeing as I attempted to kill one of your precious members? Don’t you still need me?” Eno said.

At this point, Quinn was sure that Eno was trying to get him to act out for some reason, and even Eno was wondering why Quinn was so calm even though one of his friends had nearly just been killed.

He looked over at Erin who appeared to be sleeping away, even through all of their talking. She was either quite the deep sleeper, or exhausted.

“What’s the point of getting angry at you?” Quinn said. “After all, you’re not the real Eno, right?”

Eno’s eyes widened.

‘How did he know? I’m sure he couldn’t tell the difference before. How was he able to catch on so quickly?’ Eno thought.

Even Leo wasn’t sure how Quinn knew. The aura that Leo was sensing now, and the one from before were identical to the one he had met earlier today. Unless even from back then, it had been the fake Eno as well.

The truth was, Quinn didn’t know. The person who had informed him, was Vincent. He was the real person who was able to tell which one was the real Eno and which one was the fake. It was all based on the action he had seen partake with Sil.

Vincent couldn’t quite explain it, but what was clear was, the clones didn’t have the same ability as Eno. Even if they were vampires, and could use blood skills they didn’t have the equivalent exchange ability and this was what tipped Vincent off.

“Well then, I guess it won’t be a problem if my blade were to pierce through his neck.” Leo said casually.

Hearing Leo say these words, were even frightening Quinn a little. He had never seen him so aggressive, but lately Quinn hadn’t even had a chance to catch up with Leo. At the moment, he seemed to be on edge far more than usual.

“Let’s see you try!” Eno suddenly said, stepping forward having encased blood around the tip of the blade. Even with Leo pushing his sword forward a stream of blood hardened around it and it was unable to do anything.

The next second, Eno lifted his hand, and controlling the blood around the blade he lifted the sword up and away from him. However, a few seconds later, and using the second stage of Qi, Leo was able to surround his blade and take the blood off to attempt to attack again.

“Interesting, no wonder you are so interested in Pure, you share the same power as them!” Eno said, soon covering both of his fists in spirals of blood.

When Leo went to attack again, the spiral flattened out like a shield blocking the attack, and even with Qi disrupting the flow of blood, the shield would constantly regenerate itself holding the sword in place as it spun around.

With his other hand free, Eno attempted to attack, but soon felt a kick to the back of his leg, causing him to fall to one knee.

“You getting involved in our fight, I thought you were just going to stand there and watch.” Eno said, looking at Quinn behind him.

“Leo, don’t kill him. Capture the clone and I’m sure we can learn a lot about him.” Quinn said.

He didn’t know how strong this clone of Eno’s was. Perhaps it had equal power to Eno, or a little less, but with the two of them, he was sure they could capture Eno quite successfully.

While down on the ground. Eno attempted to spin around and kick the back of Quinn’s leg. But Quinn naturally lifted it up, and when he put his foot down he stomped on Eno’s leg. A strike from Leo’s sword came from above, and Eno combined both spirals of blood surrounding his hand, to block the attack once again.

Then, after stopping the sword in place, the blood started to move upward, branching off like tree branches and was heading straight for Leo. Quinn was trying to hurry and pushed his shadow over to help Leo, hoping it would get there in time, but it wasn’t needed.

As a strange invisible force, soon pushed all of the tree branches of blood back to where it was. Seeing this opportunity, Quinn stomped the back of Eno’s legs two more times, and then pulled both of Eno’s arms back.

At that moment, abandoning his sword to be held by the blood, Leo rushed to the side and grabbed Eno's head. A strange sudden burst of energy was felt, and soon Eno's eyes were closed as his body went limp.

"What was that?" Quinn asked. "Did you kill him?"

"That, I guess I haven't had time to tell you, but I think I have managed to perfect the third stage of Qi." Leo answered. "Don't worry he is not dead, but why did you want to capture him?"

Quinn suspected that capturing the real Eno would never be as easy, but in truth he actually wanted one of Enos clones. "Let's take him to Logan and have him do a little check up, we just need to find what exactly this, or he, is."

'I would be a little careful Quinn. Remember, the real Eno is still out there, and we don't yet know what these other Eno's are capable of.' Vincent warned. 'They might have some way that they are able to communicate and pass on information to each other. Or perhaps they each have a mind of their own, similar to Borden.'

—

It wasn't that Logan was prepared for restraining Eno if something was to happen. The way he explained it, was that he just happened to have been working all day today, on special restraints that would be able to hold a vampire leader.

It was based off the black material from the vampire world, and glathrium. They were similar to a pair of cuffs but far thicker and gave no space for movement of one's hands or legs at all. Making so one couldn't build up power to break them.

At the moment, a blood sample was being taken and all sorts of body checks were being done on the Eno clone. Hoping to find out if it really was a clone, or something else, and maybe they could help Sil without his help.

Quinn never planned to resort to anything like this, but after what Eno had done he felt like he had every right to do what he was doing at the moment.

The spider that Logan had continued to monitor what they believed was to be the real Eno, who was currently wide awake himself.

'Should I let things just play out as they are going now? So far they are doing expectantly well.' Eno thought. 'Perhaps they deserve a few rewards.'

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Trapped between two

"I have to ask." Eno said. "How did you know I would be here?"

With a blade pointed an inch away from Eno's neck. He seemed pretty calm and it didn't look like he was fazed at all. Judging by his aura, Leo could tell this as well.

"Was that a question?" Leo asked. "I thought you only answered questions if you got something in return. You seem to be quite the composed person but unfortunately for you, I can see more than others ever could with their eyes. For a brief moment, perhaps you didn't react but your aura did when you saw Erin's hair colour change.

"It is my duty to look after those in the Cursed family."

“You have the right attitude to be a vampire knight. If you were a real vampire everyone would be fighting to have you as their knight.” Eno said. “It looks like Quinn has found a good one, but my question wasn’t directed towards you.”

At that moment, shadows started to disperse and another person was seen present in the room, and that was Quinn. He had been in the room from the very beginning and was ready to jump in to save Erin at any moment, but what had surprised him was Leo being there as well.

“Coming from someone who made those comments about Borden, I don’t see why you wouldn’t feel a similar way about Erin either. Besides, for someone who had put me through a pretty cruel test, do you think I would trust you on the ship so easily?” Quinn said.

It was at that moment that Eno realised that Quinn wasn’t as naive as he thought. He had given him an illusion that he was free to do as he wished while continuing to follow him.

“Congratulations, but what will you be doing to me now then, seeing as I attempted to kill one of your precious members? Don’t you still need me?” Eno said.

At this point, Quinn was sure that Eno was trying to get him to act out for some reason, and even Eno was wondering why Quinn was so calm even though one of his friends had nearly just been killed.

He looked over at Erin who appeared to be sleeping away, even through all of their talking. She was either quite the deep sleeper, or exhausted.

“What’s the point of getting angry at you?” Quinn said. “After all, you’re not the real Eno, right?”

Eno’s eyes widened.

‘How did he know? I’m sure he couldn’t tell the difference before. How was he able to catch on so quickly?’ Eno thought.

Even Leo wasn't sure how Quinn knew. The aura that Leo was sensing now, and the one from before were identical to the one he had met earlier today. Unless even from back then, it had been the fake Eno as well.

The truth was, Quinn didn't know. The person who had informed him, was Vincent. He was the real person who was able to tell which one was the real Eno and which one was the fake. It was all based on the action he had seen partake with Sil.

Vincent couldn't quite explain it, but what was clear was, the clones didn't have the same ability as Eno. Even if they were vampires, and could use blood skills they didn't have the equivalent exchange ability and this was what tipped Vincent off.

"Well then, I guess it won't be a problem if my blade were to pierce through his neck." Leo said casually.

Hearing Leo say these words, were even frightening Quinn a little. He had never seen him so aggressive, but lately Quinn hadn't even had a chance to catch up with Leo. At the moment, he seemed to be on edge far more than usual.

"Let's see you try!" Eno suddenly said, stepping forward having encased blood around the tip of the blade. Even with Leo pushing his sword forward a stream of blood hardened around it and it was unable to do anything.

The next second, Eno lifted his hand, and controlling the blood around the blade he lifted the sword up and away from him. However, a few seconds later, and using the second stage of Qi, Leo was able to surround his blade and take the blood off to attempt to attack again.

"Interesting, no wonder you are so interested in Pure, you share the same power as them!" Eno said, soon covering both of his fists in spirals of blood.

When Leo went to attack again, the spiral flattened out like a shield blocking the attack, and even with Qi disrupting the flow of blood, the shield would constantly regenerate itself holding the sword in place as it spun around.

With his other hand free, Eno attempted to attack, but soon felt a kick to the back of his leg, causing him to fall to one knee.

“You getting involved in our fight, I thought you were just going to stand there and watch.” Eno said, looking at Quinn behind him.

“Leo, don’t kill him. Capture the clone and I’m sure we can learn a lot about him.” Quinn said.

He didn’t know how strong this clone of Eno’s was. Perhaps it had equal power to Eno, or a little less, but with the two of them, he was sure they could capture Eno quite successfully.

While down on the ground. Eno attempted to spin around and kick the back of Quinn’s leg. But Quinn naturally lifted it up, and when he put his foot down he stomped on Eno’s leg. A strike from Leo’s sword came from above, and Eno combined both spirals of blood surrounding his hand, to block the attack once again.

Then, after stopping the sword in place, the blood started to move upward, branching off like tree branches and was heading straight for Leo. Quinn was trying to hurry and pushed his shadow over to help Leo, hoping it would get there in time, but it wasn’t needed.

As a strange invisible force, soon pushed all of the tree branches of blood back to where it was. Seeing this opportunity, Quinn stomped the back of Eno’s legs two more times, and then pulled both of Eno’s arms back.

At that moment, abandoning his sword to be held by the blood, Leo rushed to the side and grabbed Eno’s head. A strange sudden burst of energy was felt, and soon Eno’s eyes were closed as his body went limp.

“What was that?” Quinn asked. “Did you kill him?”

“That, I guess I haven’t had time to tell you, but I think I have managed to perfect the third stage of Qi.” Leo answered. “Don’t worry he is not dead, but why did you want to capture him?”

Quinn suspected that capturing the real Eno would never be as easy, but in truth he actually wanted one of Enos clones. "Let's take him to Logan and have him do a little check up, we just need to find what exactly this, or he, is."

'I would be a little careful Quinn. Remember, the real Eno is still out there, and we don't yet know what these other Eno's are capable of.' Vincent warned. 'They might have some way that they are able to communicate and pass on information to each other. Or perhaps they each have a mind of their own, similar to Borden.'

It wasn't that Logan was prepared for restraining Eno if something was to happen. The way he explained it, was that he just happened to have been working all day today, on special restraints that would be able to hold a vampire leader.

It was based off the black material from the vampire world, and glathrium. They were similar to a pair of cuffs but far thicker and gave no space for movement of one's hands or legs at all. Making so one couldn't build up power to break them.

At the moment, a blood sample was being taken and all sorts of body checks were being done on the Eno clone. Hoping to find out if it really was a clone, or something else, and maybe they could help Sil without his help.

Quinn never planned to resort to anything like this, but after what Eno had done he felt like he had every right to do what he was doing at the moment.

The spider that Logan had continued to monitor what they believed was to be the real Eno, who was currently wide awake himself.

'Should I let things just play out as they are going now? So far they are doing expectantly well.' Eno thought. 'Perhaps they deserve a few rewards.'

My Vampire System Chapter 1038

– The secrets of a clone

What everyone assumed to be a clone of Eno, was strapped up into a chair with the special restraints on his arms and legs. Logan was quite confident this could hold a vampire but would constantly look back, wondering when he would wake up. Needles had been injected into him for sedation while Logan was running a few tests.

When looking at what was happening to Eno right now, even if it was a clone, Quinn felt a little bad. He somewhat used to imagine this was what his life would be subjected to if they ever found out about his secret.

‘You can’t feel bad Quinn, remember you would have never done such things if for one, Eno was straight up and honest with you.’ Vincent said. ‘And two, Eno attempted to attack those in your group first.’

It was true, Eno actions in the end had led Quinn to do this, and in a way it wasn’t like they were torturing him. In fact, Logan wasn’t doing much to Eno, other than taking a few samples here and there, what was clear to them was that this Eno was a vampire and was treated like one.

Any wounds that would be made on his body would heal at a fast rate, and his cells had a reaction to human blood. After testing for a few hours, it looked like Logan was finally done, but he wasn’t jumping for joy or had much of a reaction.

“I guess you didn’t find the answer you were looking for?” Said Quinn.

Logan shook his head.

“I can answer a few of the questions we might have had, but I don’t think it was what we were looking for Quinn.” Logan answered. “It’s quite clear that this Eno is a clone. Based on what you have told me. When looking for MC cells there seems to be none. What I’m not sure about is if it’s because the body can’t produce MC cells or if it’s out of choice.

“When trying to reverse the process or create a cloning process similar to this clone, it seems to fail nearly every time. At least when trying to create a clone with another clone. I tried using the techniques

I learnt from the vampire lab, the same way I created Borden and the same way I created my Dalki hand. I used my own blood but the cells just deteriorated too fast.

"I assume this was the original problem in the first place when creating a clone, and that's why they needed to mix beast blood strong enough with human blood to sustain the clone. So I'm afraid I can't create a body for Vorden and Sil. Maybe the way Eno does it now is different."

"What if you were to use my blood?" Quinn asked.

Perhaps they couldn't create another human, but what about using vampire blood.

"I already attempted something like that at the vampire lab, where there were samples of vampire blood. It won't work."

"If you were looking to find out anything else from this clone. Weather information is passed through each other or something else, I'm afraid I won't be able to tell just with this equipment."

From their investigation at least they had gotten one answer. That Eno was somehow able to create clones of himself, which meant he probably could do something for Vorden and Raten. Looking at Logan now, he seemed a bit defeated, he didn't turn his head away from the lab screen while talking to Quinn at all.

As if it was annoying him that he couldn't figure out something that someone else could.

'The struggle of geniuses.' Vincent sighed. 'You wouldn't understand Quinn. Would you mind asking Logan if I can take a look at the data?'

When Quinn lived Vincent's life, there were some things he experienced but he didn't understand the way Vincent's mind worked. He was able to see him experience and do things, but it was far too advanced and was just a bunch of numbers and strange letters to Quinn. Which was why he often forgot that Vincent was actually a great mind himself.

“Do you mind if I have a look at what you found out?” Quinn asked. Of course Logan was fine with letting him have a look, but didn’t have much hope that Quinn would spot something that he hadn’t done.

After reading through everything for a while and letting Vincent look at things, all Quinn kept hearing was a ‘Ah I see’ or ‘that makes sense.’ But nothing else, until eventually he explained what he had found out so far.

“It seems like your friend is facing a similar problem that I faced when I was also trying to create a blood substitute. There was a time when I also was trying to clone certain parts of a human but it wouldn’t work out, even with my ability it was quite impossible.” Vincent explained.

“I think that your friend is missing one key bit of information here. Remember Eno is an original. Vampires may live a long life but they don’t live forever, even their cells die, but as for Originals, they can live on.

“Perhaps this is what Jim had thought back then as well. Using an original’s cells. Something that wouldn’t die would allow a person to create a perfect clone.”

While Vincent explained this, Quinn also spoke out loud for Logan to hear as well, and due to the way Quinn was saying these words, Logan knew it wasn’t coming from him but from something or someone else. Perhaps his system.

The problem was, they didn’t have the real Eno in their possession at the moment to test out that theory.

However, Quinn was thinking about something else. It made sense that the Dalki were a failed experiment, but at the same time somewhat successful, but then how were the vampires able to create a blood substitute then?

This was something even Vincent didn’t know the answer to, due to it being after his time.

At that moment, Eno started to wake up, or more so he started to speak.

“Well, did you find everything you wished to find?”

Immediately, Quinn went up to Eno and looked at him. Quite frankly he had enough, he had kept his cool for too long, and didn't want to keep messing around with another trouble.

“Eno enough playing games.” Quinn said. “I know you might have been a king in the past. You're some great original vampire that created the tenth family but right now I'm telling you two things. I'm the current leader of the tenth family and I'm the leader of the Cursed faction and everyone on this ship.

“To me you are none of those, and you have been messing with us for far too long.”

“Are you saying this to me because you now know I'm the clone?” Eno replied. “Don't you want to go and speak to the real Eno?” Quinn asked.

“Quite frankly, I don't give a crap.” Quinn said. “I know you know everything that the original Eno knows, and I just want you to answer some of my questions. You are on my ship and if you want to stay here you need to start following my orders.

“We have been doing well without you so far, and the Cursed faction can continue, you have been more trouble than good, I'll find my own way to bring back Vorden and Raten. You can't keep using that as blackmail.”

The room was silent, with only four of them present and with Eno saying nothing. Quinn got up and gave out a sigh.

“Leo, do whatever you want with him.” Quinn said. The next second, Leo drew his blade.

“Okay!” Eno shouted, giving out a big sigh after like it was tiring. “Okay, so that's what you want right, just for me to answer your questions. Then fine, let's talk about everything. Whatever you want to ask I'll happily answer. I think I have tried to break your bonds for long enough. I never thought Humans vampires, turned humans who barely knew each other would honestly care for each other that much.

“But Quinn let me tell you this to start with. I decided not to kill Erin because you’re right, she is part of your group and you have been doing well so far, but do you even know why Dhampirs are so dangerous?” Eno said.

“From what I know, it’s just because the vampires are afraid. Afraid that there is a race that is stronger when fighting them, and can stay out in the sun.” Quinn replied. “The vampires believe they are the strongest race and would never want something stronger than them to live.”

At least, this was partly from Quinn’s own views from what he had learnt.

Grand laughter started to come from Eno’s chair.

“Is that what you believe, who told you all of this? Although this is somewhat true, that’s not the reason at all. You remember when you asked me about protecting vampires and humans? Well, you’re right. I do want to protect them both, and I believe that’s possible. However, if a Dhampir exists, that will never be possible. let me tell you the real reason why the vampires are so afraid of the Dhampirs.” Eno said.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– The secrets of a clone

What everyone assumed to be a clone of Eno, was strapped up into a chair with the special restraints on his arms and legs. Logan was quite confident this could hold a vampire but would constantly look back, wondering when he would wake up. Needles had been injected into him for sedation while Logan was running a few tests.

When looking at what was happening to Eno right now, even if it was a clone, Quinn felt a little bad. He somewhat used to imagine this was what his life would be subjected to if they ever found out about his secret.

'You can't feel bad Quinn, remember you would have never done such things if for one, Eno was straight up and honest with you.' Vincent said. 'And two, Eno attempted to attack those in your group first.'

It was true, Eno actions in the end had led Quinn to do this, and in a way it wasn't like they were torturing him. In fact, Logan wasn't doing much to Eno, other than taking a few samples here and there, what was clear to them was that this Eno was a vampire and was treated like one.

Any wounds that would be made on his body would heal at a fast rate, and his cells had a reaction to human blood. After testing for a few hours, it looked like Logan was finally done, but he wasn't jumping for joy or had much of a reaction.

"I guess you didn't find the answer you were looking for?" Said Quinn.

Logan shook his head.

"I can answer a few of the questions we might have had, but I don't think it was what we were looking for Quinn." Logan answered. "It's quite clear that this Eno is a clone. Based on what you have told me. When looking for MC cells there seems to be none. What I'm not sure about is if it's because the body can't produce MC cells or if it's out of choice.

"When trying to reverse the process or create a cloning process similar to this clone, it seems to fail nearly every time. At least when trying to create a clone with another clone. I tried using the techniques I learnt from the vampire lab, the same way I created Borden and the same way I created my Dalki hand. I used my own blood but the cells just deteriorated too fast.

"I assume this was the original problem in the first place when creating a clone, and that's why they needed to mix beast blood strong enough with human blood to sustain the clone. So I'm afraid I can't create a body for Vorden and Sil. Maybe the way Eno does it now is different."

"What if you were to use my blood?" Quinn asked.

Perhaps they couldn't create another human, but what about using vampire blood.

"I already attempted something like that at the vampire lab, where there were samples of vampire blood. It won't work."

"If you were looking to find out anything else from this clone. Weather information is passed through each other or something else, I'm afraid I won't be able to tell just with this equipment."

From their investigation at least they had gotten one answer. That Eno was somehow able to create clones of himself, which meant he probably could do something for Vorden and Raten. Looking at Logan now, he seemed a bit defeated, he didn't turn his head away from the lab screen while talking to Quinn at all.

As if it was annoying him that he couldn't figure out something that someone else could.

'The struggle of geniuses.' Vincent sighed. 'You wouldn't understand Quinn. Would you mind asking Logan if I can take a look at the data?'

When Quinn lived Vincent's life, there were some things he experienced but he didn't understand the way Vincent's mind worked. He was able to see him experience and do things, but it was far too advanced and was just a bunch of numbers and strange letters to Quinn. Which was why he often forgot that Vincent was actually a great mind himself.

"Do you mind if I have a look at what you found out?" Quinn asked. Of course Logan was fine with letting him have a look, but didn't have much hope that Quinn would spot something that he hadn't done.

After reading through everything for a while and letting Vincent look at things, all Quinn kept hearing was a 'Ah I see' or 'that makes sense.' But nothing else, until eventually he explained what he had found out so far.

“It seems like your friend is facing a similar problem that I faced when I was also trying to create a blood substitute. There was a time when I also was trying to clone certain parts of a human but it wouldn’t work out, even with my ability it was quite impossible.” Vincent explained.

“I think that your friend is missing one key bit of information here. Remember Eno is an original. Vampires may live a long life but they don’t live forever, even their cells die, but as for Originals, they can live on.

“Perhaps this is what Jim had thought back then as well. Using an original’s cells. Something that wouldn’t die would allow a person to create a perfect clone.”

While Vincent explained this, Quinn also spoke out loud for Logan to hear as well, and due to the way Quinn was saying these words, Logan knew it wasn’t coming from him but from something or someone else. Perhaps his system.

The problem was, they didn’t have the real Eno in their possession at the moment to test out that theory.

However, Quinn was thinking about something else. It made sense that the Dalki were a failed experiment, but at the same time somewhat successful, but then how were the vampires able to create a blood substitute then?

This was something even Vincent didn’t know the answer to, due to it being after his time.

At that moment, Eno started to wake up, or more so he started to speak.

“Well, did you find everything you wished to find?”

Immediately, Quinn went up to Eno and looked at him. Quite frankly he had enough, he had kept his cool for too long, and didn’t want to keep messing around with another trouble.

“Eno enough playing games.” Quinn said. “I know you might have been a king in the past. You’re some great original vampire that created the tenth family but right now I’m telling you two things. I’m the current leader of the tenth family and I’m the leader of the Cursed faction and everyone on this ship.

“To me you are none of those, and you have been messing with us for far too long.”

“Are you saying this to me because you now know I’m the clone?” Eno replied. “Don’t you want to go and speak to the real Eno?” Quinn asked.

“Quite frankly, I don’t give a crap.” Quinn said. “I know you know everything that the original Eno knows, and I just want you to answer some of my questions. You are on my ship and if you want to stay here you need to start following my orders.

“We have been doing well without you so far, and the Cursed faction can continue, you have been more trouble than good, I’ll find my own way to bring back Vorden and Raten. You can’t keep using that as blackmail.”

The room was silent, with only four of them present and with Eno saying nothing. Quinn got up and gave out a sigh.

“Leo, do whatever you want with him.” Quinn said. The next second, Leo drew his blade.

“Okay!” Eno shouted, giving out a big sigh after like it was tiring. “Okay, so that’s what you want right, just for me to answer your questions. Then fine, let’s talk about everything. Whatever you want to ask I’ll happily answer. I think I have tried to break your bonds for long enough. I never thought Humans vampires, turned humans who barely knew each other would honestly care for each other that much.

“But Quinn let me tell you this to start with. I decided not to kill Erin because you’re right, she is part of your group and you have been doing well so far, but do you even know why Dhampirs are so dangerous?” Eno said.

“From what I know, it’s just because the vampires are afraid. Afraid that there is a race that is stronger when fighting them, and can stay out in the sun.” Quinn replied. “The vampires believe they are the strongest race and would never want something stronger than them to live.”

At least, this was partly from Quinn's own views from what he had learnt.

Grand laughter started to come from Eno's chair.

"Is that what you believe, who told you all of this? Although this is somewhat true, that's not the reason at all. You remember when you asked me about protecting vampires and humans? Well, you're right. I do want to protect them both, and I believe that's possible. However, if a Dhampir exists, that will never be possible. Let me tell you the real reason why the vampires are so afraid of the Dhampirs." Eno said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1039

– The final deal

Quinn knew that it was important to keep what Erin was a secret, due to it being one of the 'Kill on sight subclasses.' Similar to the blood fairy. However, Quinn thought it made sense since their blood was deadly, and even he and his group were able to benefit from the use of the fairy blood.

As for Erin being a Dhampir, there hadn't been any stand out signs why they were treated in a similar way.

"Say whatever you want, but no matter what, I'm not getting rid of Erin." Quinn said. "She has done nothing wrong."

"I understand that, but you should at least know the time bomb that you are holding onto." Eno replied. "You being a human turned vampire, you will probably understand this more from your perspective. The urge a vampire gets when they smell human blood for the first time. The first time a vampire gets a taste for the blood.

"It's something so powerful that one loses their mind, not knowing what they have done."

Quinn remembered this well, because in the process, he had taken the blood of one of his now closest friends, Layla.

“Now as you said, the Dhampir are a superior race, they don’t need blood, and they can live in the sunlight without having to use rings like us, but they don’t come without their own faults either.

“I’m sure you’ve noticed your subclasses evolving in certain ways, and it’s the same for a Dhampir. Only, they grow through killing vampires not their blood, but from killing. The I.u.s.t they feel is the same as a vampire’s for blood, but there is a big difference. Vampires don’t need to kill humans to satisfy their I.u.s.t and hunger. So tell me, how would you be able to satisfy her needs?

“If she’s already killed a few, then slowly over time that I.u.s.t will grow stronger, just like a vampire I.u.s.t for human blood grows over time as they starve for blood.”

Now it made sense, why the vampires were afraid of them. According to Eno, their I.u.s.t was only satisfied by killing vampires. It was like a bloodsucker but one who hunted vampires instead.

“But Erin’s never shown any signs of anything like that!” Quinn argued back. “And, if there are vampires that can control their I.u.s.t for blood, then I’m sure that Erin can do the same.”

“You make a good point.” Eno replied. “Perhaps there is a way for ‘One’ to control their I.u.s.t, but eventually there will be those that can’t, and from the looks of it, your vampire knight has already noticed a few things.”

Turning to Leo, Quinn was wondering what he was on about. Leo looked as calm as he did before, but that’s when Quinn noticed it wasn’t his facial expression that changed. It was his heart beat.

Knowing the cat was out of the bag, Leo spoke.

“Erin is learning Quinn.” Leo said. “She is learning to control it, and I have promised her if anything happens that is against her own wishes, that I will be the one to stop her. I will make sure she doesn’t hurt any of her friends.”

Hearing this was not what Quinn was expecting. Even more so, he didn’t expect Leo to hide something like this from him. Was it when Erin had done battle in the vampire world? Now that she had killed a

vampire, was that I.u.s.t growing by the day? It was now another problem that he had to deal with, and this time, he didn't have to worry about the humans of the group.

"She will learn to control it Quinn, just as you said, trust her." Leo reassured him.

"I wouldn't see this as a bad thing, if it was me, why not make her stronger? Make her evolve and control her powers just like you did Quinn, and soon you will have someone fit to be by your side equal in strength, or maybe even surpassing the strength of any vampire ever seen."

'Train her?' Quinn thought. How would that even be possible? If she had to kill vampires to evolve? It wasn't like Quinn, who could level up through killing beasts. Thinking about this was annoying him more and he just wanted to move on from the subject.

"Enough!" Quinn shouted. "Now it's time for us to do the questioning. Tell me, why did the Dalki attack Planet Caladi, and why didn't you let me call for help?"

"You haven't guessed that by now?" Eno replied. "I have a network and I have been feeding the information to the Dalki for a while now. There's a reason why they weren't so quick to attack earth after the first war.

"They assumed that the beast was secretly on planet Caladi thanks to me, at the same time I knew that you would be there Quinn. Remember, I created the system with Vincent and the Green family, I knew what it was meant to do. Vincent probably had no idea that I knew who he was at the time, but I knew everything and I chose to help him.

"Through the system, By completing quests it would gradually give you Vincent's vampire strength from the book and increase your own as you learnt yourself what being a vampire meant. I wanted to put you in a dire situation so you could grow and improve but you impressed me Quinn.

"I underestimated your strength. Either you are a talented boy because of the Eno bloodline that runs through your veins, or the system has somehow become more powerful than I ever predicted."

This was something that Vincent had guessed as well. The system was growing. There were some things that had been set up by the three creators but when Vincent gave his powers to the book along with the

system, they were unaware that his soul would be bound to the system. Vincent had a theory that perhaps his own ability was being used by the system which was how it was surpassing everyone's expectations. Rewarding Quinn, like it had its own ability of equivalent exchanges.

Quinn didn't like the answer Eno had given, but it was one he had expected at least. He had already told him how he didn't care for the individual lives of humans.

"Jim, is he the one that created the Dalki, is he still alive and helping them?" Quinn asked.

"I'm suppressed you learnt of that name. It looks like you have been doing your own research together. Yes, in fact I assume that Jim was also the one behind the Green family's death. I don't quite understand his emotions behind helping the Dalki, but I have been in search of him since. At the moment, he is untouchable." Eno replied.

"What do you mean?" Quinn asked.

"Haven't I been saying this the whole time, the Dalki are a dangerous threat, why do you think I keep repeating this fact. Because the simple truth is, if the Dalki right now were to attack the human race you would lose the fight.

"You must know what Dalki blood does to vampires, so it isn't the same for the vampires but even they are blind to their growing strength and their desperate measures. However, if Arthur has joined their side for whatever reason, perhaps it is my own doing, then it means the vampires will definitely lose."

"About Sil, you said that you could make two bodies for him, what were you planning to do and how were you planning to do it?" Quinn asked.

"I created the clones using part of my power. There's indeed a way to create human clones at the moment, but there is a catch that I was only going to reveal until later. If I was to create a normal human clone, at most with my abilities subsidising the cloning process, they could live for two years."

When Eno said this, Logan was expecting Quinn to be more angry, didn't this mean they actually couldn't bring Raten and Vorden back. At least not permanently. Yet for some reason Quinn was calm.

'It looks like we are going to have to go with my third plan anyway.' Quinn thought.

"Are there any more questions, what about you Logan? I can talk about the days I knew some of your relatives, although I didn't know your parents well so I guess it would be useless, and as for why Jim killed your parents you would have to ask him that question yourself." Said Eno.

"I do have a question." Logan said. "In the vampire world, we know of Jim's lab but we also found another lab. One where there was a test, a trial almost. One where after completing each quest there would be a special red pill given to each of the participants. The teleporter that you made found on earth sent us to that Lab. I know it's yours and not Jim's. What was that used for?"

Logan had been curious about them ever since, in truth he had found a way to recreate the red pills, but there was a reason he didn't want to distribute them to all those in the Cursed. Something just felt strange about them.

"Ah yes, the blood pills. You see I was testing a certain effect with them, a way to make humans stronger by mixing in parts of vampire cells. The pills worked of course but there was a large problem with them.

"If a vampire was to take the pill, it would have no such effect, but if a human was to take one, it would permanently increase a certain attribute. What I found out later was these pills borrowed from the future. For each pill taken, it would drastically shorten the lifespan of a person. My goal is to make it so humans could survive.

"If a pill like that got out, there would be a war between each other as they overdosed attempting to kill each other."

Finally there was quiet in the room. Quinn had gotten the answers he was looking for, but there were still a couple things that he hadn't learnt about. Eno didn't really know why Arthur was against the vampires, and the strength of the Dalki. There was also what Eno meant when he was referring to his people that he had working for him everywhere, were they more clones? But these were things they could find out with time, as long as the relationship between them grew.

'Are the humans and vampires underestimating the Dlaki, or is Eno overestimating them, and can Arthur be convinced not to kill the vampires. If these things are true, then I still need to get stronger, and quickly. I still need Eno.' Quinn thought.

“I’m going to call in that favour you owe me. For answering everything, you can stay on the ship, but no more trouble Eno. I mean it. You really want to help the humans, and so do I. In theory, we have the same goal. You think I’m not strong enough to go against the Dalki. Then make me strong enough. Teach me how to use my blood skills.

“And we will have the best chance against the Dalki race. Do we have a deal?” Quinn asked.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– The final deal

Quinn knew that it was important to keep what Erin was a secret, due to it being one of the ‘Kill on sight subclasses.’ Similar to the blood fairy. However, Quinn thought it made sense since their blood was deadly, and even he and his group were able to benefit from the use of the fairy blood.

As for Erin being a Dhampir, there hadn’t been any stand out signs why they were treated in a similar way.

“Say whatever you want, but no matter what, I’m not getting rid of Erin.” Quinn said. “She has done nothing wrong.”

“I understand that, but you should at least know the time bomb that you are holding onto.” Eno replied. “You being a human turned vampire, you will probably understand this more from your perspective. The urge a vampire gets when they smell human blood for the first time. The first time a vampire gets a taste for the blood.

“It’s something so powerful that one loses their mind, not knowing what they have done.”

Quinn remembered this well, because in the process, he had taken the blood of one of his now closest friends, Layla.

“Now as you said, the Dhampir are a superior race, they don’t need blood, and they can live in the sunlight without having to use rings like us, but they don’t come without their own faults either.

“I’m sure you’ve noticed your subclasses evolving in certain ways, and it’s the same for a Dhampir. Only, they grow through killing vampires not their blood, but from killing. The I.u.s.t they feel is the same as a vampire’s for blood, but there is a big difference. Vampires don’t need to kill humans to satisfy their I.u.s.t and hunger. So tell me, how would you be able to satisfy her needs?

“If she’s already killed a few, then slowly over time that I.u.s.t will grow stronger, just like a vampire I.u.s.t for human blood grows over time as they starve for blood.”

Now it made sense, why the vampires were afraid of them. According to Eno, their I.u.s.t was only satisfied by killing vampires. It was like a bloodsucker but one who hunted vampires instead.

“But Erin’s never shown any signs of anything like that!” Quinn argued back. “And, if there are vampires that can control their I.u.s.t for blood, then I’m sure that Erin can do the same.”

“You make a good point.” Eno replied. “Perhaps there is a way for ‘One’ to control their I.u.s.t, but eventually there will be those that can’t, and from the looks of it, your vampire knight has already noticed a few things.”

Turning to Leo, Quinn was wondering what he was on about. Leo looked as calm as he did before, but that’s when Quinn noticed it wasn’t his facial expression that changed. It was his heart beat.

Knowing the cat was out of the bag, Leo spoke.

“Erin is learning Quinn.” Leo said. “She is learning to control it, and I have promised her if anything happens that is against her own wishes, that I will be the one to stop her. I will make sure she doesn’t hurt any of her friends.”

Hearing this was not what Quinn was expecting. Even more so, he didn’t expect Leo to hide something like this from him. Was it when Erin had done battle in the vampire world? Now that she had killed a vampire, was that I.u.s.t growing by the day? It was now another problem that he had to deal with, and this time, he didn’t have to worry about the humans of the group.

“She will learn to control it Quinn, just as you said, trust her.” Leo reassured him.

“I wouldn’t see this as a bad thing, if it was me, why not make her stronger? Make her evolve and control her powers just like you did Quinn, and soon you will have someone fit to be by your side equal in strength, or maybe even surpassing the strength of any vampire ever seen.”

‘Train her?’ Quinn thought. How would that even be possible? If she had to kill vampires to evolve? It wasn’t like Quinn, who could level up through killing beasts. Thinking about this was annoying him more and he just wanted to move on from the subject.

“Enough!” Quinn shouted. “Now it’s time for us to do the questioning. Tell me, why did the Dalki attack Planet Caladi, and why didn’t you let me call for help?”

“You haven’t guessed that by now?” Eno replied. “I have a network and I have been feeding the information to the Dalki for a while now. There’s a reason why they weren’t so quick to attack earth after the first war.

“They assumed that the beast was secretly on planet Caladi thanks to me, at the same time I knew that you would be there Quinn. Remember, I created the system with Vincent and the Green family, I knew what it was meant to do. Vincent probably had no idea that I knew who he was at the time, but I knew everything and I chose to help him.

“Through the system, By completing quests it would gradually give you Vincent’s vampire strength from the book and increase your own as you learnt yourself what being a vampire meant. I wanted to put you in a dire situation so you could grow and improve but you impressed me Quinn.

“I underestimated your strength. Either you are a talented boy because of the Eno bloodline that runs through your veins, or the system has somehow become more powerful than I ever predicted.”

This was something that Vincent had guessed as well. The system was growing. There were some things that had been set up by the three creators but when Vincent gave his powers to the book along with the system, they were unaware that his soul would be bound to the system. Vincent had a theory that perhaps his own ability was being used by the system which was how it was surpassing everyone’s expectations. Rewarding Quinn, like it had its own ability of equivalent exchanges.

Quinn didn’t like the answer Eno had given, but it was one he had expected at least. He had already told him how he didn’t care for the individual lives of humans.

“Jim, is he the one that created the Dalki, is he still alive and helping them?” Quinn asked.

“I’m suppressed you learnt of that name. It looks like you have been doing your own research together. Yes, in fact I assume that Jim was also the one behind the Green family’s death. I don’t quite understand his emotions behind helping the Dalki, but I have been in search of him since. At the moment, he is untouchable.” Eno replied.

“What do you mean?” Quinn asked.

“Haven’t I been saying this the whole time, the Dalki are a dangerous threat, why do you think I keep repeating this fact. Because the simple truth is, if the Dalki right now were to attack the human race you would lose the fight.

“You must know what Dalki blood does to vampires, so it isn’t the same for the vampires but even they are blind to their growing strength and their desperate measures. However, if Arthur has joined their side for whatever reason, perhaps it is my own doing, then it means the vampires will definitely lose.”

“About Sil, you said that you could make two bodies for him, what were you planning to do and how were you planning to do it?” Quinn asked.

“I created the clones using part of my power. There’s indeed a way to create human clones at the moment, but there is a catch that I was only going to reveal until later. If I was to create a normal human clone, at most with my abilities subsidising the cloning process, they could live for two years.”

When Eno said this, Logan was expecting Quinn to be more angry, didn’t this mean they actually couldn’t bring Raten and Vorden back. At least not permanently. Yet for some reason Quinn was calm.

‘It looks like we are going to have to go with my third plan anyway.’ Quinn thought.

“Are there any more questions, what about you Logan? I can talk about the days I knew some of your relatives, although I didn’t know your parents well so I guess it would be useless, and as for why Jim killed your parents you would have to ask him that question yourself.” Said Eno.

“I do have a question.” Logan said. “In the vampire world, we know of Jim’s lab but we also found another lab. One where there was a test, a trial almost. One where after completing each quest there would be a special red pill given to each of the participants. The teleporter that you made found on earth sent us to that Lab. I know it’s yours and not Jim’s. What was that used for?”

Logan had been curious about them ever since, in truth he had found a way to recreate the red pills, but there was a reason he didn’t want to distribute them to all those in the Cursed. Something just felt strange about them.

“Ah yes, the blood pills. You see I was testing a certain effect with them, a way to make humans stronger by mixing in parts of vampire cells. The pills worked of course but there was a large problem with them.

“If a vampire was to take the pill, it would have no such effect, but if a human was to take one, it would permanently increase a certain attribute. What I found out later was these pills borrowed from the future. For each pill taken, it would drastically shorten the lifespan of a person. My goal is to make it so humans could survive.

“If a pill like that got out, there would be a war between each other as they overdosed attempting to kill each other.”

Finally there was quiet in the room. Quinn had gotten the answers he was looking for, but there were still a couple things that he hadn't learnt about. Eno didn't really know why Arthur was against the vampires, and the strength of the Dalki. There was also what Eno meant when he was referring to his people that he had working for him everywhere, were they more clones? But these were things they could find out with time, as long as the relationship between them grew.

'Are the humans and vampires underestimating the Dalki, or is Eno overestimating them, and can Arthur be convinced not to kill the vampires. If these things are true, then I still need to get stronger, and quickly. I still need Eno.' Quinn thought.

"I'm going to call in that favour you owe me. For answering everything, you can stay on the ship, but no more trouble Eno. I mean it. You really want to help the humans, and so do I. In theory, we have the same goal. You think I'm not strong enough to go against the Dalki. Then make me strong enough. Teach me how to use my blood skills.

"And we will have the best chance against the Dalki race. Do we have a deal?" Quinn asked.

My Vampire System Chapter 1040

– Evolving the blood

Things were getting busier than ever around the Cursed faction. Usually there would be some members that were left to do nothing but look at reports all day, but today many were busy moving back and forth using the teleporters frequently.

However the busiest of them all was without a doubt, was Sam. The reason for this was due to the influx of things he needed to deal with immediately after Oscar had declared war.

As soon as this happened, the Cursed faction were given two field armies to deal with consisting of around a hundred thousand troops each. He had to get in contact with all the lieutenants, majors, and colonels so that he could pass down what information they needed to know.

They had now left Earth and were being spread out based on Sam's command to the planets that the Cursed faction owned. The Graylash family had been given the same amount of troops, while the remaining six field armies were kept under Oscar's control.

Organising the troops was harder than Sam first thought. One of the reasons was due to suddenly gaining another commander. The army had never been split up in such a way and when Sam suddenly chucked in an additional position, soon he realised that factions and military were run quite differently.

Fortunately there were people there to help him who were more experienced and he was thankful for this. After several hours of dealing with that, Sam also had to deal with something else. On top of all the work he had so far, he had also been given three corps groups that each consisted of around fifteen thousand soldiers. What's more is that the soldiers in these corps weren't just any soldiers, they were students that had been taken out of school early.

Within that group there were those that had decided to join the Cursed faction. Not knowing their skills too well, it was a tough thing for him to do and there were even some he wanted to bring on board the Cursed ship, and he was also looking for certain individuals.

Finally on top of all this, there were even the many factions and the Cursed group themselves, but at least Helen was mainly looking after this side of operations.

Standing by the command centre, Sam was finally getting some rest in his chair. Although he didn't actually have to physically do much and just sent orders to everyone else, no one really knew how tiring it was to oversee so many people.

"I'm sorry for putting so much on your plate, Sam." Quinn said.

"It looks like you have another job for me?" Sam said with a weary smile.

"Not another job, I'm just checking up on you. I think Paul would be a good person in a time like this to help things along, but I know you're a fast learner." Quinn said. "I know it might not be the right time, but I was just checking up on that other request of mine."

Sam tapped away on the computer in front of him and brought up a holographic report.

“There’s been nothing yet, but I’ll get someone to come and inform you if we find something. You don’t have to come and keep meeting me like this, Quinn. I know you’re busy doing your own things. You leave this stuff to me and when the fighting starts, I’ll leave that part to you.”

“I’ll be doing just that, so you might not see me for a while, but I’ll always be able to keep in touch with you.” Quinn said before heading out of the room. He walked to a large reinforced door and stopped in front of it.

‘There’s been a few upgrades to this since the last time I used it, Sam did say there were some complaints from those on the ship.’ Quinn thought, entering the code to the door and then entering the room, but when he did he wasn’t the only one standing in there.

“I hope you’re ready, my teaching methods might not be the most ethical, but I will always guarantee results.” Eno said with a smile.

Quinn didn’t say anything but stepped into the training room and stood opposite him. After Eno had accepted the deal, his clone was sent away but Quinn also made him comply with one more condition – that none of Eno’s clones were allowed to be on the ship either.

Complying, all he asked for was a ship in return, and in total two of them had gone off somewhere, while Brock remained.

“Now, I know you wanted me to teach you more about blood skills, and of course I will happily do that. I see my job as making you the best you can be, the strongest you can be to defeat the Dalki.” Eno explained. “However, we will be using the system to our advantage to make you progress faster than ever, tell me, what level are your blood abilities at?” Eno asked.

“Level?” Quinn asked, and pulled up his stats screen. It was strange talking to someone other than Vincent about the system, but it just reminded Quinn there was one more person who knew a lot about the system and probably more than Vincent.

“Why is this important?” Quinn asked.

“Just tell me what your highest level blood skill is and I can explain after.” Eno replied.

[Blood swipe Level 4]

[Blood spray Level 3]

[Blood decent kick Level 2]

[Blood wall Level 1]

[Blood bank Level 2]

[Blood bullet Level 1]

Seeing these, Quinn was thinking about when the skills levelled up. Not every skill seemed to be treated as equally, but through repeated use they would eventually level up or even be levelled up through a rare quest reward.

However, something like the blood bank that was used in every fight took longer to level up and then there were skills he hardly used like the blood wall, because he found his shadow was more effective and only used the wall as a replacement at times.

“I guess that would be my blood swipe skill at level 4.” Quinn answered.

“Only level 4?” Eno replied. “And you still managed to kill that many Dalki, that’s your highest skill? Well, I guess it only means you have huge potential to grow. Have you ever wondered why the other leaders seem to have more skills than you? Of course, they spent hundreds of years learning certain blood skills but we don’t have that much time. Now that the system knows you’re a vampire lord it should have at least given you the same skills.

“Well the answer is quite simple, the system max level for each skill is level five, however skills can evolve and turn into something else. For example, the blood cannon skill the leaders know is just another version of the blood bullet and so on.

“As for Qi and the shadow fighting techniques, you have learnt a lot in a short amount of time. Because of all these things you have tried to learn, you were unable to specialise in the blood skills like the system originally intended.

“So we need to learn these skills quickly, we need to get your skills to level five as soon as possible. Whenever we train together, I want you to only use the blood skills. Think back to all the fights you had in the vampire world, I want you to fight like a vampire.” Eno said, as his eyes started to glow red, and the red hardened blood started to cover his arms, spiralling above his clothes he wore.

The pattern almost looked like he had moving flames running up his arms. Eno came charging in at the speed of the other vampire leaders and threw out a fist. Seeing this, almost on instinct Quinn wanted to activate the shadow, but remembered what Eno had just said.

[Blood wall] Quinn activated his skill, putting in ten points of his HP, but as the fist hit the wall it smashed through it in seconds. Quinn was ready to dodge the fist for he too had speed at the same level of the leaders and thought he would at least be able to avoid this. Blood started spilling out from his hardened arms and latched onto Quinn’s shoulder like a sticky glue substance, he attempted to pull away but by then a fist was planted in his face and his body was thrown into the ground.

“This will be the second part of your lesson, learning how to control the blood. Remember, if you can’t beat me by only using your blood skills, then you have no hope of saving the humans or the vampires.”

Feeling the punch still ringing in his head and thinking about how Eno had only fought him for a few seconds, a few thoughts went through Quinn’s mind.

‘Richard Eno seems stronger than any of the other vampire leaders I have faced before, and he’s saying even he can’t stop the Dalki?’

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Evolving the blood

Things were getting busier than ever around the Cursed faction. Usually there would be some members that were left to do nothing but look at reports all day, but today many were busy moving back and forth using the teleporters frequently.

However the busiest of them all was without a doubt, was Sam. The reason for this was due to the influx of things he needed to deal with immediately after Oscar had declared war.

As soon as this happened, the Cursed faction were given two field armies to deal with consisting of around a hundred thousand troops each. He had to get in contact with all the lieutenants, majors, and colonels so that he could pass down what information they needed to know.

They had now left Earth and were being spread out based on Sam's command to the planets that the Cursed faction owned. The Graylash family had been given the same amount of troops, while the remaining six field armies were kept under Oscar's control.

Organising the troops was harder than Sam first thought. One of the reasons was due to suddenly gaining another commander. The army had never been split up in such a way and when Sam suddenly chucked in an additional position, soon he realised that factions and military were run quite differently.

Fortunately there were people there to help him who were more experienced and he was thankful for this. After several hours of dealing with that, Sam also had to deal with something else. On top of all the work he had so far, he had also been given three corps groups that each consisted of around fifteen thousand soldiers. What's more is that the soldiers in these corps weren't just any soldiers, they were students that had been taken out of school early.

Within that group there were those that had decided to join the Cursed faction. Not knowing their skills too well, it was a tough thing for him to do and there were even some he wanted to bring on board the Cursed ship, and he was also looking for certain individuals.

Finally on top of all this, there were even the many factions and the Cursed group themselves, but at least Helen was mainly looking after this side of operations.

Standing by the command centre, Sam was finally getting some rest in his chair. Although he didn't actually have to physically do much and just sent orders to everyone else, no one really knew how tiring it was to oversee so many people.

"I'm sorry for putting so much on your plate, Sam." Quinn said.

"It looks like you have another job for me?" Sam said with a weary smile.

"Not another job, I'm just checking up on you. I think Paul would be a good person in a time like this to help things along, but I know you're a fast learner." Quinn said. "I know it might not be the right time, but I was just checking up on that other request of mine."

Sam tapped away on the computer in front of him and brought up a holographic report.

"There's been nothing yet, but I'll get someone to come and inform you if we find something. You don't have to come and keep meeting me like this, Quinn. I know you're busy doing your own things. You leave this stuff to me and when the fighting starts, I'll leave that part to you."

"I'll be doing just that, so you might not see me for a while, but I'll always be able to keep in touch with you." Quinn said before heading out of the room. He walked to a large reinforced door and stopped in front of it.

'There's been a few upgrades to this since the last time I used it, Sam did say there were some complaints from those on the ship.' Quinn thought, entering the code to the door and then entering the room, but when he did he wasn't the only one standing in there.

"I hope you're ready, my teaching methods might not be the most ethical, but I will always guarantee results." Eno said with a smile.

Quinn didn't say anything but stepped into the training room and stood opposite him. After Eno had accepted the deal, his clone was sent away but Quinn also made him comply with one more condition – that none of Eno's clones were allowed to be on the ship either.

Complying, all he asked for was a ship in return, and in total two of them had gone off somewhere, while Brock remained.

“Now, I know you wanted me to teach you more about blood skills, and of course I will happily do that. I see my job as making you the best you can be, the strongest you can be to defeat the Dalki.” Eno explained. “However, we will be using the system to our advantage to make you progress faster than ever, tell me, what level are your blood abilities at?” Eno asked.

“Level?” Quinn asked, and pulled up his stats screen. It was strange talking to someone other than Vincent about the system, but it just reminded Quinn there was one more person who knew a lot about the system and probably more than Vincent.

“Why is this important?” Quinn asked.

“Just tell me what your highest level blood skill is and I can explain after.” Eno replied.

[Blood swipe Level 4]

[Blood spray Level 3]

[Blood decent kick Level 2]

[Blood wall Level 1]

[Blood bank Level 2]

[Blood bullet Level 1]

Seeing these, Quinn was thinking about when the skills levelled up. Not every skill seemed to be treated as equally, but through repeated use they would eventually level up or even be levelled up through a rare quest reward.

However, something like the blood bank that was used in every fight took longer to level up and then there were skills he hardly used like the blood wall, because he found his shadow was more effective and only used the wall as a replacement at times.

“I guess that would be my blood swipe skill at level 4.” Quinn answered.

“Only level 4?” Eno replied. “And you still managed to kill that many Dalki, that’s your highest skill? Well, I guess it only means you have huge potential to grow. Have you ever wondered why the other leaders seem to have more skills than you? Of course, they spent hundreds of years learning certain blood skills but we don’t have that much time. Now that the system knows you’re a vampire lord it should have at least given you the same skills.

“Well the answer is quite simple, the system max level for each skill is level five, however skills can evolve and turn into something else. For example, the blood cannon skill the leaders know is just another version of the blood bullet and so on.

“As for Qi and the shadow fighting techniques, you have learnt a lot in a short amount of time. Because of all these things you have tried to learn, you were unable to specialise in the blood skills like the system originally intended.

“So we need to learn these skills quickly, we need to get your skills to level five as soon as possible. Whenever we train together, I want you to only use the blood skills. Think back to all the fights you had in the vampire world, I want you to fight like a vampire.” Eno said, as his eyes started to glow red, and the red hardened blood started to cover his arms, spiralling above his clothes he wore.

The pattern almost looked like he had moving flames running up his arms. Eno came charging in at the speed of the other vampire leaders and threw out a fist. Seeing this, almost on instinct Quinn wanted to activate the shadow, but remembered what Eno had just said.

[Blood wall] Quinn activated his skill, putting in ten points of his HP, but as the fist hit the wall it smashed through it in seconds. Quinn was ready to dodge the fist for he too had speed at the same level

of the leaders and thought he would at least be able to avoid this. Blood started spilling out from his hardened arms and latched onto Quinn's shoulder like a sticky glue substance, he attempted to pull away but by then a fist was planted in his face and his body was thrown into the ground.

"This will be the second part of your lesson, learning how to control the blood. Remember, if you can't beat me by only using your blood skills, then you have no hope of saving the humans or the vampires."

Feeling the punch still ringing in his head and thinking about how Eno had only fought him for a few seconds, a few thoughts went through Quinn's mind.

'Richard Eno seems stronger than any of the other vampire leaders I have faced before, and he's saying even he can't stop the Dalki?'

My Vampire System Chapter 1041

– The Blade's power

Running through the large Cursed ship after just leaving the medical bay, everyone's head was turning at a panicked individual. It was Wevil. He had sweat running down his face not because he was tired, but due to him being concerned. He went through people one by one dodging them as if they were attacking him like his favourite game of block block.

While doing so, he was holding something particular in his arms, tight like a baby, it was several blood packs.

'They told me to head to Quinn's training room as quickly as possible with this. Did something happen? Who needs blood, or is it something else?!' Wevil thought.

All the Cursed leaders by now knew the combination to Quinn's personal training room. From time to time they would even use it to practice, things they didn't want other members to see, but Wevil knew who was in it at the moment, so he made sure to run as fast as he could.

Eventually, when he reached the room, he proceeded to enter the combination, dropping one of the blood packs on the floor. The doors started to open as he went to bend down to pick up the blood packs. When he lifted his head, he almost immediately dropped the blood packs again.

“Quinn!” Wevil shouted, rushing forward.

The room was a complete mess. It looked like a slaughterhouse. Where hundreds of dead bodies would have been torn apart with their blood squirted all around the room. However, what Wevil was concerned about was the person, who looked near passed out on the floor, with the most blood surrounding him.

“Oh, you got here incredibly fast. good job.” Eno said. “It means we can get back to training as soon as possible. With this guy’s fast legs there’s no need to panic.”

Kneeling down, Wevil could see the wounds on Quinn’s body, and couldn’t imagine how much blood must have been used, but Quinn wasn’t the only one that was hurt as well. Even though Eno appeared to be fine standing, he too had wounds on his body that hadn’t exactly healed yet, with blood all around him as well.

After feeding Quinn the blood, his wounds started to heal, and his eyes were looking more alive.

“Pass me one of these blood bags, Boy.” Eno demanded.

“Why should I, what did you do to our leader!” Wevil shouted back.

“Just give him one.” Quinn said. Now standing up, taking a blood bag from Wevil and throwing it to where Eno was.

“Don’t worry, most of this was done by me not him, I’m just trying to learn my limits. Wevil, see if Logan can create a special icebox like the ones the vampires use. Then you won’t have to keep running backwards and forwards.” Quinn said.

Hearing this, Wevil was a little more relieved but still couldn't imagine what type of training the two of them were doing to just warrant this huge amount of blood, but if Quinn said he was fine, and Eno wasn't attacking him while he was in the state he was in. He guessed that it was safe for now.

Once leaving the room, Wevil wondered if he should report this to Sam, thinking he would know best about what to do, but Sam was a little busy these days.

'Quinn, you don't have to keep pushing yourself so far! Is it because you think we can't help you enough?' Wevil thought.

While Quinn's and Eno's wounds were healing from their fight, Quinn had a few questions on his mind.

"You want to ask me something don't you?" Eno said. "I wondered why you didn't ask me more things back then, but it seems you know that perhaps it will just be a distraction for yourself, but if it is really playing on your mind then that too can be a distraction, so ask away if you really want."

Quinn was thinking about many questions he wanted to ask Eno, but he thought he would do so when the time came to it. For now he had asked everything that was needed to be asked for the time being while they were still in the middle of the war with the Dalki.

"I know your goal, or so you say. You want vampires and humans to both live, correct? I've met some people like you, Arthur was one of them who cared for humans a lot, you could even say for me it was the same, but there is a difference between me and Arthur and you. The two of us were humans, had human lives before we were turned, but what about you?"

"What are the original vampires, were you always vampires, and why do you want to protect the humans so much, what's your reason?" Quinn asked.

Eno didn't reply immediately, and when looking at Quinn it didn't feel like he was looking at him at all rather through him.

"If I told you about the vampire's origin, it wouldn't change much Quinn. In fact, it wouldn't change anything. The important thing is how people deal with vampires now, how they view themselves.

“I bet even you saw it as a curse when you first got it, but have your views changed? As for the second question, is it wrong to care for humans? Must there be a reason for wanting to protect someone or something when you see them getting hurt?” Eno replied.

This answer wasn't the truth, and Quinn knew it. There were times when Eno spoke about humans, and whenever he did there was so much passion in his words and actions. He was going far and beyond to protect the humans. Quinn almost believed if Eno was to choose out of the humans or the vampires, he would choose humanity.

‘It’s a shame we did not hear an answer.’ Vincent said. ‘Even I would have liked to know how the first vampires came to be. I have had a few theories myself. Especially since we also know that Arthur had been turned as well, and it wasn’t the regular way either making him have the same body as an original. We must be careful not to push him away though, his secrets seem....painful.’ Vincent said, reminding him about his own past as well.

While the others were training, Logan was busy working on duplicating the demon tier finding device. He was also hoping he could create something that would be able to gauge the beast crystals of other tiers as well.

The problem he was facing was the group didn't have any Demi-god tier crystals. Without a certain number of Demi-god tier crystals it would be impossible for one to create a device to find them based on their energy. The only reason a demon tier device was able to be created was due to how much larger of an energy force they produced compared to other beasts.

So for now, he would just be creating more devices so their group could search for demon tiers a lot easier. At least they knew where there would be demon tiers, there would also be high level beasts on those planets as well.

All of this was being done, because of Sil, but more so so that they could farm for better equipment for the rest of the faction as well. However, the beast expeditions have been roped in a bit, due to the war.

“Tell me, why did you choose to make that arm of yours?” A voice said.

Logan continued to work on the item, but wasn't ignoring the person.

"I needed a replacement for my arm anyway, and I'm not good enough." Logan said.

"Not good enough? I think you're mistaken. You are far stronger than you know. I wanted to ask, I remember at one point and time you trained with the Blade twins on the island. You fought, and learnt a lot there, you were a talented individual and you even unlocked your soul weapon.

"You say you're weak, but since then have you even fought using your full strength? Or are you scared of something?" Brock asked.

For a brief second Logan stopped working on his items as Brock got up to leave the room.

"When you're done with that, if you really think you're still weak, then me and you should train sometime. Remember how long I stayed on the Blade island for? If you want I can make you as strong as them.

"I'll make sure Logan, that you never think you are weak again."

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

– The Blade's power

Running through the large Cursed ship after just leaving the medical bay, everyone's head was turning at a panicked individual. It was Wevil. He had sweat running down his face not because he was tired, but due to him being concerned. He went through people one by one dodging them as if they were attacking him like his favourite game of block block.

While doing so, he was holding something particular in his arms, tight like a baby, it was several blood packs.

'They told me to head to Quinn's training room as quickly as possible with this. Did something happen? Who needs blood, or is it something else?!' Wevil thought.

All the Cursed leaders by now knew the combination to Quinn's personal training room. From time to time they would even use it to practice, things they didn't want other members to see, but Wevil knew who was in it at the moment, so he made sure to run as fast as he could.

Eventually, when he reached the room, he proceeded to enter the combination, dropping one of the blood packs on the floor. The doors started to open as he went to bend down to pick up the blood packs. When he lifted his head, he almost immediately dropped the blood packs again.

"Quinn!" Wevil shouted, rushing forward.

The room was a complete mess. It looked like a slaughterhouse. Where hundreds of dead bodies would have been torn apart with their blood squirted all around the room. However, what Wevil was concerned about was the person, who looked near passed out on the floor, with the most blood surrounding him.

"Oh, you got here incredibly fast. good job." Eno said. "It means we can get back to training as soon as possible. With this guy's fast legs there's no need to panic."

Kneeling down, Wevil could see the wounds on Quinn's body, and couldn't imagine how much blood must have been used, but Quinn wasn't the only one that was hurt as well. Even though Eno appeared to be fine standing, he too had wounds on his body that hadn't exactly healed yet, with blood all around him as well.

After feeding Quinn the blood, his wounds started to heal, and his eyes were looking more alive.

"Pass me one of these blood bags, Boy." Eno demanded.

“Why should I, what did you do to our leader!” Wevil shouted back.

“Just give him one.” Quinn said. Now standing up, taking a blood bag from Wevil and throwing it to where Eno was.

“Don’t worry, most of this was done by me not him, I’m just trying to learn my limits. Wevil, see if Logan can create a special icebox like the ones the vampires use. Then you won’t have to keep running backwards and forwards.” Quinn said.

Hearing this, Wevil was a little more relieved but still couldn’t imagine what type of training the two of them were doing to just warrant this huge amount of blood, but if Quinn said he was fine, and Eno wasn’t attacking him while he was in the state he was in. He guessed that it was safe for now.

Once leaving the room, Wevil wondered if he should report this to Sam, thinking he would know best about what to do, but Sam was a little busy these days.

‘Quinn, you don’t have to keep pushing yourself so far! Is it because you think we can’t help you enough?’ Wevil thought.

While Quinn’s and Eno’s wounds were healing from their fight, Quinn had a few questions on his mind.

“You want to ask me something don’t you?” Eno said. “I wondered why you didn’t ask me more things back then, but it seems you know that perhaps it will just be a distraction for yourself, but if it is really playing on your mind then that too can be a distraction, so ask away if you really want.”

Quinn was thinking about many questions he wanted to ask Eno, but he thought he would do so when the time came to it. For now he had asked everything that was needed to be asked for the time being while they were still in the middle of the war with the Dalki.

“I know your goal, or so you say. You want vampires and humans to both live, correct? I’ve met some people like you, Arthur was one of them who cared for humans a lot, you could even say for me it was the same, but there is a difference between me and Arthur and you. The two of us were humans, had human lives before we were turned, but what about you?”

“What are the original vampires, were you always vampires, and why do you want to protect the humans so much, what’s your reason?” Quinn asked.

Eno didn’t reply immediately, and when looking at Quinn it didn’t feel like he was looking at him at all rather through him.

“If I told you about the vampire’s origin, it wouldn’t change much Quinn. In fact, it wouldn’t change anything. The important thing is how people deal with vampires now, how they view themselves.

“I bet even you saw it as a curse when you first got it, but have your views changed? As for the second question, is it wrong to care for humans? Must there be a reason for wanting to protect someone or something when you see them getting hurt?” Eno replied.

This answer wasn’t the truth, and Quinn knew it. There were times when Eno spoke about humans, and whenever he did there was so much passion in his words and actions. He was going far and beyond to protect the humans. Quinn almost believed if Eno was to choose out of the humans or the vampires, he would choose humanity.

‘It’s a shame we did not hear an answer.’ Vincent said. ‘Even I would have liked to know how the first vampires came to be. I have had a few theories myself. Especially since we also know that Arthur had been turned as well, and it wasn’t the regular way either making him have the same body as an original. We must be careful not to push him away though, his secrets seem....painful.’ Vincent said, reminding him about his own past as well.

While the others were training, Logan was busy working on duplicating the demon tier finding device. He was also hoping he could create something that would be able to gauge the beast crystals of other tiers as well.

The problem he was facing was the group didn’t have any Demi-god tier crystals. Without a certain number of Demi-god tier crystals it would be impossible for one to create a device to find them based on their energy. The only reason a demon tier device was able to be created was due to how much larger of an energy force they produced compared to other beasts.

So for now, he would just be creating more devices so their group could search for demon tiers a lot easier. At least they knew where there would be demon tiers, there would also be high level beasts on those planets as well.

All of this was being done, because of Sil, but more so so that they could farm for better equipment for the rest of the faction as well. However, the beast expeditions have been roped in a bit, due to the war.

“Tell me, why did you choose to make that arm of yours?” A voice said.

Logan continued to work on the item, but wasn't ignoring the person.

“I needed a replacement for my arm anyway, and I'm not good enough.” Logan said.

“Not good enough? I think you're mistaken. You are far stronger than you know. I wanted to ask, I remember at one point and time you trained with the Blade twins on the island. You fought, and learnt a lot there, you were a talented individual and you even unlocked your soul weapon.

“You say you're weak, but since then have you even fought using your full strength? Or are you scared of something?” Brock asked.

For a brief second Logan stopped working on his items as Brock got up to leave the room.

“When you're done with that, if you really think you're still weak, then me and you should train sometime. Remember how long I stayed on the Blade island for? If you want I can make you as strong as them.

“I'll make sure Logan, that you never think you are weak again.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1042

– Cleaning job

It had been a while since anyone had seen Quinn. The leaders of the Cursed faction knew what Quinn was doing, but they at least expected to see him around the ship from time to time. Still, they hadn't seen him at all, and it had been several days now.

Some were getting worried but there was one person that assured them that everything was okay, which was Wevil. Like asked, Wevil had informed Logan of Quinn's request and it didn't take him long to create something that could do the job.

There was just one slight problem. Heading to outside the training room, Wevil couldn't even remember when he had last seen the door open.

'Have they really been in their training this whole time, are they sleeping in there as well?' Wevil thought, as he pressed the round button on the special machine that looked like a giant box and the door opened. The cold air would form a mist as it opened and when looking inside it was just as Wevil thought.

"It's going to need filling again." Wevil said, as the blood packs inside were down to the last few. "At this rate, I might have to ask Sam to see if more people need to donate blood."

The rate that blood packs were being used was unimaginable, and only Wevil knew the true number, as he was the person who would constantly have to go back and forth.

—

Inside the room itself the room was even redder than before. Marks of dry blood all over. It looked like a war had taken place in the room constantly with no one to clean it up, and both of them could only smell one thing, blood.

This time, both Quinn and Eno seemed to be huffing and panting, neither of them badly injured.

"The skill has finally levelled up." Quinn spoke, taking a breath in between.

“Good, because I was getting tired myself.” Eno replied.

‘I can’t believe it, this boy has been able to progress so quickly. Is he talented, or is the system beyond my expectations?’ Eno wondered.

“We can now stop focusing on trying to level up the blood abilities now you have learnt a few new skills.” Eno explained. “However, what is important in the next step, is learning how to use your blood control with said skills. As you know the king of the vampires will receive the absolute blood control book. Once a vampire learns of this, they can do whatever they wish with blood as long as their imagination allows it.”

This was true from what Quinn had seen and what had been explained to him. Cindy had used a whip made out of blood, he had never seen any of the leaders do this before. From the way it was explained, each user of the blood book created their own techniques using absolute blood control, so the next king could learn them.

“For now though, it is best we get some rest. Even if you don’t feel tired, pushing a vampire’s body this much will cause one to age quicker. This is why even when a king has the absolute blood control, they are reluctant to use it unless necessary. I am not worried for myself, but I am for you Quinn.” Eno said, for the first time showing some concern, but it was hard to tell if it was genuine or not.

Quinn decided to take a break, he didn’t know how long the two of them had been in the room for, and although Sam didn’t contact him on any new information, it didn’t mean nothing had happened, just nothing urgent enough for him to warrant being called.

Now that the two of them were to take a short break, Quinn was able to look at the room they were in.

‘I can’t make someone else clean up this mess, that’s just not right, and it’s mostly my blood.’ Quinn thought.

—

Leaving the room, Quinn had gone to a cleaning supply closet, the first thing he wanted to do was get some cleaning done, and with his speed he should be able to get it all sorted out pretty quickly. He could

have asked a water user to clear it quickly but he couldn't subject them to that, and then they would be asking questions later on.

'They're going to start thinking I'm a mass serial killer if they see that room.'

With a red bucket in his hand, and a few sponges, Quinn thought maybe even if he was quick he would need something more than that. As he turned around in the hall that led to all the training rooms, he managed to spot Logan walking behind him.

"Logan what happened to you, is someone bullying on the ship, who would do such a thing!" Quinn said, as he started to rage in anger. Logan was covered from head to toe in bruises and cuts.

"Quinn don't worry, I did this to myself. It was through my own choices, no one is bullying me." Logan said as he continued to walk.

Who could even bully Logan in the Cursed faction?

When saying those words, Logan's heart didn't flutter so it must have been true. Unlike the others, Logan wasn't a vampire so when he trained to fight, the marks, cuts and bruises would show, unless he went to a healer.

He was just unlucky to catch Quinn at a certain point and time.

'If he doesn't want me to know about it, maybe I should respect his wishes.' Quinn thought. "Just..be careful." Quinn shouted.

After cleaning up his bloody mess, Quinn finally decided to meet Sam who looked a lot calmer than the last time he had seen him. This was because he was finally getting the swing of things, and was understanding who the key and reliable people were that he needed to talk to. People he could trust to pass on his messages and see his vision, giving him a lot more free time to now focus on other things.

“You look to be in a really good mood.” Quinn said, as he exited from the transportation bridge.

“Quinn, you’re finally out but you smell a bit like chemicals.” Sam mentioned with his now s.e.n.s.i.t.i.v.e nose. “Anyway, you came at the perfect time. Thanks to Logan creating more of the Demon tier hunting devices, we should be able to cover more ground and have your request come in.

“The problem is though, there have been a lot of reports coming in from Oscar and the Graylash family, even a few from Helen, of Dalki sh.i.p.s in the nearby area. The Dalki seem to also be hovering around all the orange portal planets the human’s own at the moment, so it’s going to be risky even if we do find one.” Alex explained.

After all, Hislton was a man with a full set of demon tier armour, and had one of the strongest abilities in the world. He would at least need a single item at the demon tier level to compete with that.

While discussing things between each other, and Quinn getting briefed on the news of other things, like certain students coming on board directly to the Cursed ship. The door opened from the bridge again, and the person who had entered was Sil.

What was surprising was the fact that Sil had entered on his own, when usually he would be the one to follow Borden around the place.

“Quinn,” Sil called out. “When are we going to go to the blade island? When are we going to get back Raten and Vorden?!” It sounded like he was almost complaining.

“Soon,” Quinn answered, as he was in the middle of talking to Sam and wanted to finish what they were talking about.

“Soon, do you even want them to come back?! You’ve been stuck in that room for so long and I’ve been waiting for you, and now all you’re doing is talking. When you found out Vorden was on the blade island before, you dived in with just the three of you. Why can’t you just take the whole Cursed faction to Blade island this time if you’re so scared!” Sil shouted in anger.

These words had caught Quinn’s attention.

“Don’t care! Are you crazy Sil! ” Quinn shouted. It was the first time he had done so like that, and was also the first time he had called ‘Sil’ Crazy.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Cleaning job

It had been a while since anyone had seen Quinn. The leaders of the Cursed faction knew what Quinn was doing, but they at least expected to see him around the ship from time to time. Still, they hadn’t seen him at all, and it had been several days now.

Some were getting worried but there was one person that assured them that everything was okay, which was Wevil. Like asked, Wevil had informed Logan of Quinn’s request and it didn’t take him long to create something that could do the job.

There was just one slight problem. Heading to outside the training room, Wevil couldn’t even remember when he had last seen the door open.

‘Have they really been in their training this whole time, are they sleeping in there as well?’ Wevil thought, as he pressed the round button on the special machine that looked like a giant box and the door opened. The cold air would form a mist as it opened and when looking inside it was just as Wevil thought.

“It’s going to need filling again.” Wevil said, as the blood packs inside were down to the last few. “At this rate, I might have to ask Sam to see if more people need to donate blood.”

The rate that blood packs were being used was unimaginable, and only Wevil knew the true number, as he was the person who would constantly have to go back and forth.

—

Inside the room itself the room was even redder than before. Marks of dry blood all over. It looked like a war had taken place in the room constantly with no one to clean it up, and both of them could only smell one thing, blood.

This time, both Quinn and Eno seemed to be huffing and panting, neither of them badly injured.

“The skill has finally levelled up.” Quinn spoke, taking a breath in between.

“Good, because I was getting tired myself.” Eno replied.

‘I can’t believe it, this boy has been able to progress so quickly. Is he talented, or is the system beyond my expectations?’ Eno wondered.

“We can now stop focusing on trying to level up the blood abilities now you have learnt a few new skills.” Eno explained. “However, what is important in the next step, is learning how to use your blood control with said skills. As you know the king of the vampires will receive the absolute blood control book. Once a vampire learns of this, they can do whatever they wish with blood as long as their imagination allows it.”

This was true from what Quinn had seen and what had been explained to him. Cindy had used a whip made out of blood, he had never seen any of the leaders do this before. From the way it was explained, each user of the blood book created their own techniques using absolute blood control, so the next king could learn them.

“For now though, it is best we get some rest. Even if you don’t feel tired, pushing a vampire’s body this much will cause one to age quicker. This is why even when a king has the absolute blood control, they are reluctant to use it unless necessary. I am not worried for myself, but I am for you Quinn.” Eno said, for the first time showing some concern, but it was hard to tell if it was genuine or not.

Quinn decided to take a break, he didn't know how long the two of them had been in the room for, and although Sam didn't contact him on any new information, it didn't mean nothing had happened, just nothing urgent enough for him to warrant being called.

Now that the two of them were to take a short break, Quinn was able to look at the room they were in.

'I can't make someone else clean up this mess, that's just not right, and it's mostly my blood.' Quinn thought.

—

Leaving the room, Quinn had gone to a cleaning supply closet, the first thing he wanted to do was get some cleaning done, and with his speed he should be able to get it all sorted out pretty quickly. He could have asked a water user to clear it quickly but he couldn't subject them to that, and then they would be asking questions later on.

'They're going to start thinking I'm a mass serial killer if they see that room.'

With a red bucket in his hand, and a few sponges, Quinn thought maybe even if he was quick he would need something more than that. As he turned around in the hall that led to all the training rooms, he managed to spot Logan walking behind him.

"Logan what happened to you, is someone bullying on the ship, who would do such a thing!" Quinn said, as he started to rage in anger. Logan was covered from head to toe in bruises and cuts.

"Quinn don't worry, I did this to myself. It was through my own choices, no one is bullying me." Logan said as he continued to walk.

Who could even bully Logan in the Cursed faction?

When saying those words, Logan's heart didn't flutter so it must have been true. Unlike the others, Logan wasn't a vampire so when he trained to fight, the marks, cuts and bruises would show, unless he went to a healer.

He was just unlucky to catch Quinn at a certain point and time.

'If he doesn't want me to know about it, maybe I should respect his wishes.' Quinn thought. "Just..be careful." Quinn shouted.

After cleaning up his bloody mess, Quinn finally decided to meet Sam who looked a lot calmer than the last time he had seen him. This was because he was finally getting the swing of things, and was understanding who the key and reliable people were that he needed to talk to. People he could trust to pass on his messages and see his vision, giving him a lot more free time to now focus on other things.

"You look to be in a really good mood." Quinn said, as he exited from the transportation bridge.

"Quinn, you're finally out but you smell a bit like chemicals." Sam mentioned with his now s.e.n.s.i.t.i.v.e nose. "Anyway, you came at the perfect time. Thanks to Logan creating more of the Demon tier hunting devices, we should be able to cover more ground and have your request come in.

"The problem is though, there have been a lot of reports coming in from Oscar and the Graylash family, even a few from Helen, of Dalki sh.i.p.s in the nearby area. The Dalki seem to also be hovering around all the orange portal planets the human's own at the moment, so it's going to be risky even if we do find one." Alex explained.

After all, Hislton was a man with a full set of demon tier armour, and had one of the strongest abilities in the world. He would at least need a single item at the demon tier level to compete with that.

While discussing things between each other, and Quinn getting briefed on the news of other things, like certain students coming on board directly to the Cursed ship. The door opened from the bridge again, and the person who had entered was Sil.

What was surprising was the fact that Sil had entered on his own, when usually he would be the one to follow Borden around the place.

“Quinn,” Sil called out. “When are we going to go to the blade island? When are we going to get back Raten and Vorden?!” It sounded like he was almost complaining.

“Soon,” Quinn answered, as he was in the middle of talking to Sam and wanted to finish what they were talking about.

“Soon, do you even want them to come back?! You’ve been stuck in that room for so long and I’ve been waiting for you, and now all you’re doing is talking. When you found out Vorden was on the blade island before, you dived in with just the three of you. Why can’t you just take the whole Cursed faction to Blade island this time if you’re so scared!” Sil shouted in anger.

These words had caught Quinn’s attention.

“Don’t care! Are you crazy Sil!” Quinn shouted. It was the first time he had done so like that, and was also the first time he had called ‘Sil’ Crazy.

My Vampire System Chapter 1043

– No longer getting through

It didn’t take long for Quinn to regret the words that had left his mouth. As soon as he said them, he realised the mistake he had made. He knew what Sil’s mindset was like, how he had grown up. Anyone would be affected by what he had gone through. Now that he was so close to getting his long lost friends back, those feelings were just amplified.

The thing was, Quinn was trying harder than he could imagine. He often put on a brave face but what he was doing wasn’t easy. His training was one of the toughest things he had to bear and what he was going through wasn’t fun either. The other thing that upset him, was what Sil had said. Did he really think they were doing nothing, he wasn’t the only one working hard for Vorden and Raten, everyone was, and Quinn knew that.

When he heard Sil say that he didn’t care, it felt like all of their work was appreciated. Making it so Quinn had just lashed out. He was tired, exhausted and still hadn’t rested, causing the words to just slip

from his mouth. Looking at Sil, after hearing those words, he immediately placed his head down and was looking at the floor.

Sam was a little nervous, as he was unsure whether or not Sil was angry or upset. It could go either way since Sil was someone who respected Quinn's words and listened to him more so than others. Because of this, Sam gave a quick tug to Quinn, to try and quell the situation before it became a big deal.

"Quinn, say something?" Sam whispered.

"Sil, I'm sorry I didn't mean that. I know you have just been so worried. I think I'm just the one going a bit crazy here. Let's talk about it, and I can go through the plan, and what we plan to do, okay?" Quinn asked.

At that moment, Sil lifted up his hand, and a ball of water was floating about.

"Quinn, stop him! We don't know what abilities he has or how many strong abilities he has stored. If he fights in the command centre, the whole ship could go down!" Sam yelled now, afraid.

Quickly trying to sort out the situation, he could see Sil already getting ready to do something.

"Quinn, I never thought I would hear those words from you," Sil said, lifting his head, with a face full of tears, but soon his eyebrows frowned inwards. "If I'm really crazy, then I should start acting like it then shouldn't I!" Sil shouted, about to use the water ability.

Quickly though, Quinn raised his hand.

"You need a time out. Think before you act, Sil!" Quinn shouted, closing his hand, and a shadow was seen quickly engulfing Sil, and when it disappeared, Sil did with him.

Sam was nervous, and he was wondering if the situation was over.

"Did you use the shadow lock skill on him?" Sam asked.

“Yeah, hopefully he just needs to calm down. We have to remember on the Blade island, Sil didn’t have much chance to interact with anyone past a certain age. It’s like he’s a child sometimes, and sometimes I don’t think he knows the dangerous power he holds.” As soon as Quinn finished this sentence, he could see his MC cells going down by the second.

‘Is he attacking the space in the shadow lock?’

It seemed like Quinn’s little time out hadn’t worked, for currently inside the shadow space, Sil was attacking everything around him, hoping to break out of it.

“Damn Sil! Don’t worry Sam, I’ll be back.” Quinn said, as he cast another shadow lock on himself taking him inside the black space.

As expected, he could see Sil using a number of abilities, green strange energy crashing about, at the same time water waves bashing into the shadow around. Each time lowering Quinn’s MC.

“Sil what are you doing!” Quinn shouted.

“I’m crazy right! Just like my family, I can’t help myself but fight and destroy everything I see. After all, that’s how I was brought up. To kill everyone around me! To make sure I was always the one that survived!”

It was clear once again something had snapped in Sil, and now this was the second time. Words were becoming harder to get through to him.

Getting closer, a large wave of water came crashing towards Quinn, but it was easily avoided. Soon though, green beams of energy shot out towards Quinn, however the same thing again, as Quinn was able to avoid them.

“Look at you Sil, do you really think you can go to the Blade island in the state you are in now? Remember, the Blades have the same ability as you, even stronger ability users locked up. We can’t just fight them with power against power! It won’t work!” Quinn shouted.

However, Sil just decided to shoot a bigger energy beam, and at this point Quinn was frustrated. He avoided the attacks with a flash step and when his foot hit the black shadow ground, he leapt off it, dashing forward reaching where Sil was in an instant.

Although Sil had strong abilities, there was a huge difference between him and the others in the Blade family. Sil's body wasn't up to par. Thanks to the red pills and the training of the Blade island, Sil's body was perhaps at the same level as a vampire, perhaps slightly higher.

With good beast gear on supporting him, he could get up to the point where he could match a vampire knight in certain aspects, then with his abilities he was a dangerous force, but Sil had no decent beast gear on.

And if one was to compare a vampire's speed with Quinn's, it was the difference between night and Day. Quinn quickly was in front of Sil, and he could see him throwing a fist made of metal. A hardening ability. Grabbing it, Quinn had no problem lifting Sil up in the air, and slamming his body into the ground. It wasn't a light throw either.

"Stop this now Sil, you can't keep acting like a child!" He shouted. "I know how you feel, you're frustrated right? Because we're so close, but you're just sitting around doing nothing."

"If you're frustrated, then take it out on me. Don't let it bottle up inside. Come and see me, and me and you can fight it out anytime, Sil!" Quinn shouted to his face.

Sil shouted in anger, placing both plans on Quinn's chest and shot the beam of energy in rage. It lifted Quinn's body slightly off the ground and into the air. Soon, a red blood aura started to surround his body, and covered him like a cocoon. The blood started to move and push the green energy back and when it landed back down the blood had disappeared and Quinn was beside Sil again. Making a fist he punched Sil in the gut.

It was a hard blow, and Sil felt like he couldn't breathe. He fell to his knees trying to breathe in but it was impossible.

As for Quinn, the green blast had damaged his body as he hadn't put any of his armour on. It was a good thing as well, otherwise he was sure that he would have to give another job to Alex. The attack was a strong one, as could be seen by the wounds on his c.h.e.s.t.

Quickly though, they started to heal, and the pain shown on Quinn's face was minimal. Once Sil could breathe again, he laid on the floor out on his back.

"Do you feel better now?" Quinn said.

Covering his face with his arm. Sil was trying to hold back the tears.

"Yeah, but I...I...I can't just keep saying sorry Quinn. Why am I like this?!" He asked.

"It's not just you." Quinn replied. "Everyone feels this way, we just have our own ways of dealing with the problem. Come on, let's go back. I'm sure everyone is worried about us."

In the command centre, when Sam saw the shadow, he ducked for cover for a few seconds, under the table. He and many others knew Sil's strength and quite frankly, depending on what abilities Sil held, he thought it might be a tough fight for Quinn, especially after coming back from all that training.

When he saw Quinn look completely fine, apart from a burn mark in the c.h.e.s.t of his clothes, and Sil with red eyes, it seemed like everything was fine.

"I'm going to go talk with Borden for a little bit." Sil said, as he was about to leave.

Looking at him, Quinn just didn't know what to say or do anymore. He was out of ideas. If Sil exploded one more time, maybe he couldn't get through to him.

"Wait!" Sam shouted, as he cleared his throat and stood up straight again. "Actually, while you two were in the shadow lock place there was a bit of good news that came through." Sam explained. "We have finally located another demon tier beast."

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– No longer getting through

It didn't take long for Quinn to regret the words that had left his mouth. As soon as he said them, he realised the mistake he had made. He knew what Sil's mindset was like, how he had grown up. Anyone would be affected by what he had gone through. Now that he was so close to getting his long lost friends back, those feelings were just amplified.

The thing was, Quinn was trying harder than he could imagine. He often put on a brave face but what he was doing wasn't easy. His training was one of the toughest things he had to bear and what he was going through wasn't fun either. The other thing that upset him, was what Sil had said. Did he really think they were doing nothing, he wasn't the only one working hard for Vorden and Raten, everyone was, and Quinn knew that.

When he heard Sil say that he didn't care, it felt like all of their work was appreciated. Making it so Quinn had just lashed out. He was tired, exhausted and still hadn't rested, causing the words to just slip from his mouth. Looking at Sil, after hearing those words, he immediately placed his head down and was looking at the floor.

Sam was a little nervous, as he was unsure whether or not Sil was angry or upset. It could go either way since Sil was someone who respected Quinn's words and listened to him more so than others. Because of this, Sam gave a quick tug to Quinn, to try and quell the situation before it became a big deal.

"Quinn, say something?" Sam whispered.

“Sil, I’m sorry I didn’t mean that. I know you have just been so worried. I think I’m just the one going a bit crazy here. Let’s talk about it, and I can go through the plan, and what we plan to do, okay?” Quinn asked.

At that moment, Sil lifted up his hand, and a ball of water was floating about.

“Quinn, stop him! We don’t know what abilities he has or how many strong abilities he has stored. If he fights in the command centre, the whole ship could go down!” Sam yelled now, afraid.

Quickly trying to sort out the situation, he could see Sil already getting ready to do something.

“Quinn, I never thought I would hear those words from you,” Sil said, lifting his head, with a face full of tears, but soon his eyebrows frowned inwards. “If I’m really crazy, then I should start acting like it then shouldn’t I!” Sil shouted, about to use the water ability.

Quickly though, Quinn raised his hand.

“You need a time out. Think before you act, Sil!” Quinn shouted, closing his hand, and a shadow was seen quickly engulfing Sil, and when it disappeared, Sil did with him.

Sam was nervous, and he was wondering if the situation was over.

“Did you use the shadow lock skill on him?” Sam asked.

“Yeah, hopefully he just needs to calm down. We have to remember on the Blade island, Sil didn’t have much chance to interact with anyone past a certain age. It’s like he’s a child sometimes, and sometimes I don’t think he knows the dangerous power he holds.” As soon as Quinn finished this sentence, he could see his MC cells going down by the second.

‘Is he attacking the space in the shadow lock?’

It seemed like Quinn's little time out hadn't worked, for currently inside the shadow space, Sil was attacking everything around him, hoping to break out of it.

"Damn Sil! Don't worry Sam, I'll be back." Quinn said, as he cast another shadow lock on himself taking him inside the black space.

As expected, he could see Sil using a number of abilities, green strange energy crashing about, at the same time water waves bashing into the shadow around. Each time lowering Quinn's MC.

"Sil what are you doing!" Quinn shouted.

"I'm crazy right! Just like my family, I can't help myself but fight and destroy everything I see. After all, that's how I was brought up. To kill everyone around me! To make sure I was always the one that survived!"

It was clear once again something had snapped in Sil, and now this was the second time. Words were becoming harder to get through to him.

Getting closer, a large wave of water came crashing towards Quinn, but it was easily avoided. Soon though, green beams of energy shot out towards Quinn, however the same thing again, as Quinn was able to avoid them.

"Look at you Sil, do you really think you can go to the Blade island in the state you are in now? Remember, the Blades have the same ability as you, even stronger ability users locked up. We can't just fight them with power against power! It won't work!" Quinn shouted.

However, Sil just decided to shoot a bigger energy beam, and at this point Quinn was frustrated. He avoided the attacks with a flash step and when his foot hit the black shadow ground, he leapt off it, dashing forward reaching where Sil was in an instant.

Although Sil had strong abilities, there was a huge difference between him and the others in the Blade family. Sil's body wasn't up to par. Thanks to the red pills and the training of the Blade island, Sil's body was perhaps at the same level as a vampire, perhaps slightly higher.

With good beast gear on supporting him, he could get up to the point where he could match a vampire knight in certain aspects, then with his abilities he was a dangerous force, but Sil had no decent beast gear on.

And if one was to compare a vampire's speed with Quinn's, it was the difference between night and Day. Quinn quickly was in front of Sil, and he could see him throwing a fist made of metal. A hardening ability. Grabbing it, Quinn had no problem lifting Sil up in the air, and slamming his body into the ground. It wasn't a light throw either.

"Stop this now Sil, you can't keep acting like a child!" He shouted. "I know how you feel, you're frustrated right? Because we're so close, but you're just sitting around doing nothing."

"If you're frustrated, then take it out on me. Don't let it bottle up inside. Come and see me, and me and you can fight it out anytime, Sil!" Quinn shouted to his face.

Sil shouted in anger, placing both plans on Quinn's c.h.e.s.t and shot the beam of energy in rage. It lifted Quinn's body slightly off the ground and into the air. Soon, a red blood aura started to surround his body, and covered him like a cocoon. The blood started to move and push the green energy back and when it landed back down the blood had disappeared and Quinn was beside Sil again. Making a fist he punched Sil in the gut.

It was a hard blow, and Sil felt like he couldn't breathe. He fell to his knees trying to breathe in but it was impossible.

As for Quinn, the green blast had damaged his body as he hadn't put any of his armour on. It was a good thing as well, otherwise he was sure that he would have to give another job to Alex. The attack was a strong one, as could be seen by the wounds on his c.h.e.s.t.

Quickly though, they started to heal, and the pain shown on Quinn's face was minimal. Once Sil could breathe again, he laid on the floor out on his back.

"Do you feel better now?" Quinn said.

Covering his face with his arm. Sil was trying to hold back the tears.

“Yeah, but I...I...I can’t just keep saying sorry Quinn. Why am I like this?!” He asked.

“It’s not just you.” Quinn replied. “Everyone feels this way, we just have our own ways of dealing with the problem. Come on, let’s go back. I’m sure everyone is worried about us.”

In the command centre, when Sam saw the shadow, he ducked for cover for a few seconds, under the table. He and many others knew Sil’s strength and quite frankly, depending on what abilities Sil held, he thought it might be a tough fight for Quinn, especially after coming back from all that training.

When he saw Quinn look completely fine, apart from a burn mark in the c.h.e.s.t of his clothes, and Sil with red eyes, it seemed like everything was fine.

“I’m going to go talk with Borden for a little bit.” Sil said, as he was about to leave.

Looking at him, Quinn just didn’t know what to say or do anymore. He was out of ideas. If Sil exploded one more time, maybe he couldn’t get through to him.

“Wait!” Sam shouted, as he cleared his throat and stood up straight again. “Actually, while you two were in the shadow lock place there was a bit of good news that came through.” Sam explained. “We have finally located another demon tier beast.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1044

– Complications

After hearing the news that Sam had delivered, Sil had decided to stay instead. After all, a Demon tier beast was one of the requirements from Eno to use his abilities, at the same time, if the group were planning to hunt a demon tier beast then they would also most likely need his help.

Before the meeting was to take place, all the leaders on the Cursed ship had been called in early to the meeting room and Sam would go on to explain the details. On top of this, Brock and Eno had joined one of the meetings for the first time as well.

“The reason you have all been called here, is because another Demon tier beast has been discovered.” Sam explained. “However, there are a few complications that I need to explain first – this won’t be like the last demon hunt that everyone went on.

“The reason being, is because the Cursed faction and the Graylash faction will be the only two groups participating in this hunt. To make matters more difficult, Owen, the Graylash leader, won’t be there to help either. Therefore authority and control over how to conduct the hunt has been handed over to us.”

Hearing this, there were mixed reactions around the table. Some were happy to hear that a demon tier beast had been found, but many of the leaders still had bad memories of the beast hunt from before.

“Whoah!” Nate said. “Isn’t that a good thing? Doesn’t that mean we can basically do what we want to get the crystals?”

“A good thing?” Linda repeated. “Last time Owen and Oscar were both there with the Demon tier weapon. Even with all those resources and people we were hardly able to defeat the creature. It means we have to defeat the beast with less than we did last time.”

“Correct.” Sam replied in a very serious tone. “As we all know, we’re in this circumstance in the first place due to the current Dalki war. Oscar is of course still sorting out the military and tracking the Dalki’s movements, which is a time demanding task. In addition to this, the Dalki have been moving awfully close to the Graylash beast planets. Therefore Owen has stated that he will not be taking part and I can’t argue with him there.

“Which brings me to my next point, the reason why we will be working with the Graylash family. Thanks to Logan and the fact that now the Earthborn, Graylash, and Cursed faction are in alliance, a Demon tier location device was awarded to each of the factions. Of course, receiving this device comes with the condition of us informing one another as soon as we find a demon tier, which is a standard practice anyway.

“The demon tier beast has been located on one of the planets owned by the Graylash family. Now if we do decide to proceed with the hunt, we will be working together closely with one of their head generals as well as the faction leader of the shelter.

“Bear in mind though, that the Dalki at the moment seem to be keen on invading the Graylash planets. Anything can happen at any moment and we might have to pull out and cut our losses when we see fit.”

Despite all of Sam’s dire warnings and the downsides of proceeding with the hunt, Quinn still wanted to go ahead anyway. They were running out of time, mainly for Sil, and for Quinn to get some good equipment before there was a full scale war.

“I still think we should proceed.” Quinn replied. “However, I don’t want to take a large group with us like last time. I think a core group of our strongest members will be able to deal with the demon tier and less lives will be lost that way.”

“The problem is if it’s a large demon tier beast or it has an ability to call other tiers to its help like the last one, won’t that cause a problem?” Linda brought up an important point.

“Unfortunately, we don’t have any details on the demon tier beast, but remember that they can come in all shapes and sizes with unique abilities. Of course you would need to bear that in mind, but for this one, I actually agree with Quinn. At the moment we are spread thin and mass transportation of an army through the small teleporters takes too long.

“If the Dalki were to attack one of the Cursed faction planets and aimed for the teleporters, it would be hard getting support there in time. I already know you plan to go Quinn, so the question is who do you plan to take with you?” He asked.

Looking around the room, the strongest of the Cursed members were already currently sitting at the table with him. This made it easy for Quinn to pick the people he wanted. However, unfortunately, there were two people that were currently not present which he hoped to pick.

Leo claimed that if Quinn really needed him, he could use the summoning skill if need be. All of this information was passed on from Sam as it all happened while Quinn was busy training with Eno.

Once realising that Eno would no longer be a threat, it seemed like Leo was happy to leave the place and come back as he wished, and honestly Quinn didn’t want to restrict him, he had his own things going on.

“Of course, all of you are free to decline the invitation if you don’t want to come. I never want to force you guys.” Quinn said. “Since we don’t have much information on the Demon tier beast, I would like to take a mixture of those that bring different skills to the table.

“Linda, you have great strength that is nearly unmatched. I also wish to bring Fex, as his strings have always been able to help with disabling and slowing an enemy’s movements. Wevil, with your great speed I’m sure we can always rely on you.

“Sil will be coming along as well, we both have already agreed to that.” Quinn said, giving him a wink.

He thought that perhaps if it was something to do with getting the other two back, then Sil would be more inclined to work for it without any complaints. It also may help Sil feel like he was helping out in some way.

Some of those who weren’t selected seemed disappointed that they weren’t coming along, while others breathed a sigh of fresh air.

“Quinn, can I come?” Peter asked.

Looking at Peter, Quinn knew he was strong, but there were those that needed to remain on the ship to protect it just in case. At the same time, he already had Linda so he thought there was no reason to bring Peter.

“I don’t see why not, of course you can come.” Quinn replied.

At that moment, a shy hand had been raised from the group. When they all turned to look at who was volunteering, they were all quite stunned.

“Layla, you want to come as well?” Quinn said, surprised himself.

Honestly, he didn’t know why this time Layla didn’t go with Erin and Leo, perhaps they had a falling out or something else had happened. Ever since the incident with Helen, Layla hadn’t spoken much to Quinn at all.

“I have to be there, I didn’t get to help you at school Quinn, and Leo and Erin said that they would inform me if they found the Pure base before doing anything. It’s why I asked to stay behind, because I want to help you and I want to bring back Vorden again.” She said, with her fist clenched and a determined look on her face.

Usually, Quinn would have outright said no. Layla was strong, but against a demon tier beast, he wasn’t sure she could handle it. Still, with confidence growing in his own powers and not bringing so many members along, Quinn thought that perhaps he could at least still protect her and it would be good exposure for her.

He also didn’t know how to say no to the determination he could see in her eyes. Even if he could say no, it didn’t look like she would take that as an answer.

“You can come along, but if the demon tier beast proves to be difficult Layla, you have to understand if I ask you to stay back.” Quinn said.

Hearing this, for a second Layla’s eye twitched. The others, noticing this, wondered if something was wrong. Letting go of her clenched hand she replied.

“Thank you.”

“Okay, so it looks like we have the Cursed faction demon tier hunt team!” Announced Sam. “Going along with Quinn we have Linda, Wevil, Fex, Peter and Layla. If everyone is okay with that, I will start going through the rest of the Cursed faction agenda.”

Just as Sam was about to move on to his next point in the meeting, another hand was raised.

“Of course, I think I will need to go along with them. Don’t you think so?” Eno stated.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Complications

After hearing the news that Sam had delivered, Sil had decided to stay instead. After all, a Demon tier beast was one of the requirements from Eno to use his abilities, at the same time, if the group were planning to hunt a demon tier beast then they would also most likely need his help.

Before the meeting was to take place, all the leaders on the Cursed ship had been called in early to the meeting room and Sam would go on to explain the details. On top of this, Brock and Eno had joined one of the meetings for the first time as well.

“The reason you have all been called here, is because another Demon tier beast has been discovered.” Sam explained. “However, there are a few complications that I need to explain first – this won’t be like the last demon hunt that everyone went on.

“The reason being, is because the Cursed faction and the Graylash faction will be the only two groups participating in this hunt. To make matters more difficult, Owen, the Graylash leader, won’t be there to help either. Therefore authority and control over how to conduct the hunt has been handed over to us.”

Hearing this, there were mixed reactions around the table. Some were happy to hear that a demon tier beast had been found, but many of the leaders still had bad memories of the beast hunt from before.

“Whoah!” Nate said. “Isn’t that a good thing? Doesn’t that mean we can basically do what we want to get the crystals?”

“A good thing?” Linda repeated. “Last time Owen and Oscar were both there with the Demon tier weapon. Even with all those resources and people we were hardly able to defeat the creature. It means we have to defeat the beast with less than we did last time.”

“Correct.” Sam replied in a very serious tone. “As we all know, we’re in this circumstance in the first place due to the current Dalki war. Oscar is of course still sorting out the military and tracking the Dalki’s movements, which is a time demanding task. In addition to this, the Dalki have been moving awfully close to the Graylash beast planets. Therefore Owen has stated that he will not be taking part and I can’t argue with him there.

“Which brings me to my next point, the reason why we will be working with the Graylash family. Thanks to Logan and the fact that now the Earthborn, Graylash, and Cursed faction are in alliance, a Demon tier location device was awarded to each of the factions. Of course, receiving this device comes with the condition of us informing one another as soon as we find a demon tier, which is a standard practice anyway.

“The demon tier beast has been located on one of the planets owned by the Graylash family. Now if we do decide to proceed with the hunt, we will be working together closely with one of their head generals as well as the faction leader of the shelter.

“Bear in mind though, that the Dalki at the moment seem to be keen on invading the Graylash planets. Anything can happen at any moment and we might have to pull out and cut our losses when we see fit.”

Despite all of Sam’s dire warnings and the downsides of proceeding with the hunt, Quinn still wanted to go ahead anyway. They were running out of time, mainly for Sil, and for Quinn to get some good equipment before there was a full scale war.

“I still think we should proceed.” Quinn replied. “However, I don’t want to take a large group with us like last time. I think a core group of our strongest members will be able to deal with the demon tier and less lives will be lost that way.”

“The problem is if it’s a large demon tier beast or it has an ability to call other tiers to its help like the last one, won’t that cause a problem?” Linda brought up an important point.

“Unfortunately, we don’t have any details on the demon tier beast, but remember that they can come in all shapes and sizes with unique abilities. Of course you would need to bear that in mind, but for this one, I actually agree with Quinn. At the moment we are spread thin and mass transportation of an army through the small teleporters takes too long.

“If the Dalki were to attack one of the Cursed faction planets and aimed for the teleporters, it would be hard getting support there in time. I already know you plan to go Quinn, so the question is who do you plan to take with you?” He asked.

Looking around the room, the strongest of the Cursed members were already currently sitting at the table with him. This made it easy for Quinn to pick the people he wanted. However, unfortunately, there were two people that were currently not present which he hoped to pick.

Leo claimed that if Quinn really needed him, he could use the summoning skill if need be. All of this information was passed on from Sam as it all happened while Quinn was busy training with Eno.

Once realising that Eno would no longer be a threat, it seemed like Leo was happy to leave the place and come back as he wished, and honestly Quinn didn’t want to restrict him, he had his own things going on.

“Of course, all of you are free to decline the invitation if you don’t want to come. I never want to force you guys.” Quinn said. “Since we don’t have much information on the Demon tier beast, I would like to take a mixture of those that bring different skills to the table.

“Linda, you have great strength that is nearly unmatched. I also wish to bring Fex, as his strings have always been able to help with disabling and slowing an enemy’s movements. Wevil, with your great speed I’m sure we can always rely on you.

“Sil will be coming along as well, we both have already agreed to that.” Quinn said, giving him a wink.

He thought that perhaps if it was something to do with getting the other two back, then Sil would be more inclined to work for it without any complaints. It also may help Sil feel like he was helping out in some way.

Some of those who weren't selected seemed disappointed that they weren't coming along, while others breathed a sigh of fresh air.

"Quinn, can I come?" Peter asked.

Looking at Peter, Quinn knew he was strong, but there were those that needed to remain on the ship to protect it just in case. At the same time, he already had Linda so he thought there was no reason to bring Peter.

"I don't see why not, of course you can come." Quinn replied.

At that moment, a shy hand had been raised from the group. When they all turned to look at who was volunteering, they were all quite stunned.

"Layla, you want to come as well?" Quinn said, surprised himself.

Honestly, he didn't know why this time Layla didn't go with Erin and Leo, perhaps they had a falling out or something else had happened. Ever since the incident with Helen, Layla hadn't spoken much to Quinn at all.

"I have to be there, I didn't get to help you at school Quinn, and Leo and Erin said that they would inform me if they found the Pure base before doing anything. It's why I asked to stay behind, because I want to help you and I want to bring back Vorden again." She said, with her fist clenched and a determined look on her face.

Usually, Quinn would have outright said no. Layla was strong, but against a demon tier beast, he wasn't sure she could handle it. Still, with confidence growing in his own powers and not bringing so many members along, Quinn thought that perhaps he could at least still protect her and it would be good exposure for her.

He also didn't know how to say no to the determination he could see in her eyes. Even if he could say no, it didn't look like she would take that as an answer.

“You can come along, but if the demon tier beast proves to be difficult Layla, you have to understand if I ask you to stay back.” Quinn said.

Hearing this, for a second Layla’s eye twitched. The others, noticing this, wondered if something was wrong. Letting go of her clenched hand she replied.

“Thank you.”

“Okay, so it looks like we have the Cursed faction demon tier hunt team!” Announced Sam. “Going along with Quinn we have Linda, Wevil, Fex, Peter and Layla. If everyone is okay with that, I will start going through the rest of the Cursed faction agenda.”

Just as Sam was about to move on to his next point in the meeting, another hand was raised.

“Of course, I think I will need to go along with them. Don’t you think so?” Eno stated.

My Vampire System Chapter 1045

– The special set

After deciding what to do, it didn’t take long for Sam to get in contact with those from the Graylash family. They needed to send some orders across, to organise and prepare a few things. Although, when he mentioned how many people they were planning to send, and who would be taking charge, they didn’t exactly seem pleased with them.

At the end of the day, they had no choice. Even Owen had told them to leave everything up to the Cursed faction. In the end, Quinn had allowed Eno to go with them, but Quinn didn’t really say yes.

He still felt like Eno was more like a guest on the Cursed faction ship, rather than a part of it. If he wanted, he would leave whenever he wished. So if Eno was planning to follow them to this planet, what was stopping him?

Telling him he couldn't go, Quinn was sure Eno would do anyway, and it would only sour their relationship.

'Maybe I can learn a bit more about Eno on this trip as well.' Quinn thought.

On top of that, Sam had added one more person to the group, but they would be meeting them in the faction base along with the Graylashes. This person, was sergeant Hayley Snelleart, Paul's daughter. The reasoning, was because she was a healer.

With some people having witnessed a few things and rumours already surfacing about the Cursed faction using strange powers, Sam Didn't want more to spread. It was always normal to have a healer on the team.

At the same time, they could improve relationsh.i.p.s with the new army groups they had received.

A ship was being prepared, but before heading off, Quinn wanted to visit a certain person.

Entering the forging room where the sound of clanging never seemed to stop, he could see quite the tall, small framed but muscular person known as Alex.

"Hey Quinn." Alex said as the wings on his back started to flutter a little bit. "It's been a while since I've seen you here."

After Alex had saved the forgers from the attack with Pure, the others knew about his wings. Quinn didn't attempt to remove their memories or anything like that. In fact, he didn't want to take it away from Alex as many of them felt indebted to him and were more loyal, and even worked harder compared to before.

Luckily, nearly none of them knew what Alex's ability was before he had been turned.

'Wait, I don't even know what Alex's ability was?' Quinn thought.

However, it didn't matter now and while in the forgery he was able to let his red blood wings out freely. Hardly anyone ever came down here now. Requests were instead sent to their platoon leader, who would then file a report until it eventually got to Sam. Who would then talk to Alex, and decide where things needed to be distributed first.

"I'm sure you have heard what I'm about to go do." Quinn said, knowing news like that would have travelled fast. Even on his way to the forgery, everyone was wishing Quinn good luck. The more he heard those words the more he felt like something was just going to go wrong.

"Anyway, I was wondering what to do with a Demon tier crystal. I know certain crystals are more suited towards certain items. So I don't have a choice in what it can be turned into, the best thing would be gauntlets or a weapon type to increase our strength, but is one Demon crystal enough?"

"I'm glad you asked." Alex smiled. "Actually a demon tier crystal is a little different to all the other tiers. It has so much energy that only one is required to turn into a piece of equipment. Of course, you could probably use some Demi-god crystal or legendary crystals to enhance certain bits, but honestly you would have to get the demon tier crystal first before finding out what could be added.

"Speaking off, I know you haven't upgraded your equipment in a while and you might be annoyed at me but I made you a few things." Alex said, as he started to pull things out from underneath his workbench and place them on the table.

It was an armour set that looked to go pretty well together, as if each one was created from the crystals of the same beast. It was mainly silver in colour with blue spiral patterns twirling through each piece. On certain parts, grey fur could be seen.

"Last time, I had no experience when making your emperor tier equipment and I know it was a disappointment, but this time we had more experience with the legendary tier crystals given to us by Helen and the others." Alex explained.

"Didn't I tell you guys to use all the Legendary tier crystals on yourself first? And then focus on the main hunting teams like the Daisy group?" Quinn replied a bit annoyed.

“Quinn, you’re about to go fight another Demon tier beast, and this time alone!” Alex said. “Do you think I can really let you do that as your personal forger. If you went and died. Do you think I could ever sell my equipment, or they might even Blame me for your death!”

“I’m glad that’s your main worry.” Quinn commented.

“Besides, the legendary tier crystals were actually donated by Helen herself, and she said that she wouldn’t hand them over unless it was something made for you. I don’t know what you did to get a girl to give over these crystals. I know some who would kill their husbands to get them.

“I acutely heard that Daisy had these legendary crystals from a long time ago, but never made anything out of them. I don’t know how they managed to get so many from the same type of beast, but it only means better things for you.”

Quinn looked at the set, and even without using his inspect skill he could tell they were of the legendary tier. Equipment made with higher grade crystals just had a different shine to them when they were mixed in with the other materials.

‘Did she really just hand these over, instead of using them for herself?’ Quinn thought.

‘I guess she’s pretty serious about trying to win you over. Maybe this is a pre wedding gift? Or an anniversary gift you two don’t know about.’ Vincent said. ‘When did you two first meet again?’

Quinn knew Vincent was joking, but he still couldn’t believe what was in front of him. The equipment had already been made and was here, so of course he would use it. He would just have to give them something in return when he next saw them.

‘There is only one disappointment.’ Alex said, rubbing the back of his head. “There are no weapons. I couldn’t even make any gauntlets. All the crystals were used up. I did however, have a spare set of emperor tier gauntlets made, but once again they don’t seem to have an active ability.”

Saying this, Alex almost sounded embarrassed. First, Quinn took a glance at the Emperor tier gauntlets. Even though they would improve his stats overall, it wasn’t worth it at the moment. And there was a reason for that.

Since his Qi had improved drastically, when supplementing his Qi into the gauntlets the active skill also gave a more devastating shock compared to before, and for now, he would rather have them on him.

“I’ll take them as a spare for now.” Quinn said, placing them in his dimensional space, and heading back to the table.

[Inspect]

Using the inspect skill, the three items information were shown. The c.h.e.s.t piece, the legs, and the shoulder guards. None of the pieces of equipment had an active skill on their own. However, they did have an active skill when placed together.

A special set active skill.

Looking at the improved stats and active skill, Quinn couldn’t help but smile.

“I might have to get her a really good present after this.”

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

∴ .

– The special set

After deciding what to do, it didn’t take long for Sam to get in contact with those from the Graylash family. They needed to send some orders across, to organise and prepare a few things. Although, when he mentioned how many people they were planning to send, and who would be taking charge, they didn’t exactly seem pleased with them.

At the end of the day, they had no choice. Even Owen had told them to leave everything up to the Cursed faction. In the end, Quinn had allowed Eno to go with them, but Quinn didn't really say yes.

He still felt like Eno was more like a guest on the Cursed faction ship, rather than a part of it. If he wanted, he would leave whenever he wished. So if Eno was planning to follow them to this planet, what was stopping him?

Telling him he couldn't go, Quinn was sure Eno would do anyway, and it would only sour their relationship.

'Maybe I can learn a bit more about Eno on this trip as well.' Quinn thought.

On top of that, Sam had added one more person to the group, but they would be meeting them in the faction base along with the Graylashes. This person, was sergeant Hayley Snelleart, Paul's daughter. The reasoning, was because she was a healer.

With some people having witnessed a few things and rumours already surfacing about the Cursed faction using strange powers, Sam Didn't want more to spread. It was always normal to have a healer on the team.

At the same time, they could improve relationsh.i.p.s with the new army groups they had received.

A ship was being prepared, but before heading off, Quinn wanted to visit a certain person.

Entering the forging room where the sound of clanging never seemed to stop, he could see quite the tall, small framed but muscular person known as Alex.

"Hey Quinn." Alex said as the wings on his back started to flutter a little bit. "It's been a while since I've seen you here."

After Alex had saved the forgers from the attack with Pure, the others knew about his wings. Quinn didn't attempt to remove their memories or anything like that. In fact, he didn't want to take it away

from Alex as many of them felt indebted to him and were more loyal, and even worked harder compared to before.

Luckily, nearly none of them knew what Alex's ability was before he had been turned.

'Wait, I don't even know what Alex's ability was?' Quinn thought.

However, it didn't matter now and while in the forgery he was able to let his red blood wings out freely. Hardly anyone ever came down here now. Requests were instead sent to their platoon leader, who would then file a report until it eventually got to Sam. Who would then talk to Alex, and decide where things needed to be distributed first.

"I'm sure you have heard what I'm about to go do." Quinn said, knowing news like that would have travelled fast. Even on his way to the forgery, everyone was wishing Quinn good luck. The more he heard those words the more he felt like something was just going to go wrong.

"Anyway, I was wondering what to do with a Demon tier crystal. I know certain crystals are more suited towards certain items. So I don't have a choice in what it can be turned into, the best thing would be gauntlets or a weapon type to increase our strength, but is one Demon crystal enough?"

"I'm glad you asked." Alex smiled. "Actually a demon tier crystal is a little different to all the other tiers. It has so much energy that only one is required to turn into a piece of equipment. Of course. you could probably use some Demi-god crystal or legendary crystals to enhance certain bits, but honestly you would have to get the demon tier crystal first before finding out what could be added.

"Speaking off, I know you haven't upgraded your equipment in a while and you might be annoyed at me but I made you a few things." Alex said, as he started to pull things out from underneath his workbench and place them on the table.

It was an armour set that looked to go pretty well together, as if each one was created from the crystals of the same beast. It was mainly silver in colour with blue spiral patterns twirling through each piece. On certain parts, grey fur could be seen.

“Last time, I had no experience when making your emperor tier equipment and I know it was a disappointment, but this time we had more experience with the legendary tier crystals given to us by Helen and the others.” Alex explained.

“Didn’t I tell you guys to use all the Legendary tier crystals on yourself first? And then focus on the main hunting teams like the Daisy group?” Quinn replied a bit annoyed.

“Quinn, you’re about to go fight another Demon tier beast, and this time alone!” Alex said. “Do you think I can really let you do that as your personal forger. If you went and died. Do you think I could ever sell my equipment, or they might even Blame me for your death!”

“I’m glad that’s your main worry.” Quinn commented.

“Besides, the legendary tier crystals were actually donated by Helen herself, and she said that she wouldn’t hand them over unless it was something made for you. I don’t know what you did to get a girl to give over these crystals. I know some who would kill their husbands to get them.

“I acutely heard that Daisy had these legendary crystals from a long time ago, but never made anything out of them. I don’t know how they managed to get so many from the same type of beast, but it only means better things for you.”

Quinn looked at the set, and even without using his inspect skill he could tell they were of the legendary tier. Equipment made with higher grade crystals just had a different shine to them when they were mixed in with the other materials.

‘Did she really just hand these over, instead of using them for herself?’ Quinn thought.

‘I guess she’s pretty serious about trying to win you over. Maybe this is a pre wedding gift? Or an anniversary gift you two don’t know about.’ Vincent said. ‘When did you two first meet again?’

Quinn knew Vincent was joking, but he still couldn’t believe what was in front of him. The equipment had already been made and was here, so of course he would use it. He would just have to give them something in return when he next saw them.

‘There is only one disappointment.’ Alex said, rubbing the back of his head. ‘There are no weapons. I couldn’t even make any gauntlets. All the crystals were used up. I did however, have a spare set of emperor tier gauntlets made, but once again they don’t seem to have an active ability.’

Saying this, Alex almost sounded embarrassed. First, Quinn took a glance at the Emperor tier gauntlets. Even though they would improve his stats overall, it wasn’t worth it at the moment. And there was a reason for that.

Since his Qi had improved drastically, when supplementing his Qi into the gauntlets the active skill also gave a more devastating shock compared to before, and for now, he would rather have them on him.

‘I’ll take them as a spare for now.’ Quinn said, placing them in his dimensional space, and heading back to the table.

[Inspect]

Using the inspect skill, the three items information were shown. The c.h.e.s.t piece, the legs, and the shoulder guards. None of the pieces of equipment had an active skill on their own. However, they did have an active skill when placed together.

A special set active skill.

Looking at the improved stats and active skill, Quinn couldn’t help but smile.

‘I might have to get her a really good present after this.’

My Vampire System Chapter 1046

– Working together

The group were travelling in a medium sized ship towards their destination. The planet was owned by the Graylash family so they didn’t have a teleporter on board. Of course, they could have traveled to a

closer planet owned by the Graylash family and teleported from there, but at the moment most of the factions were traveling using space sh.i.p.s.

This was apparent just on their journey, nearly every planet they went by had large forces of sh.i.p.s protecting them, ready to act on a moment's notice. This was actually advice given by Oscar. After not being able to use teleporters on planet Caladi, they feared that the Dalki now had some sort of teleportation jamming device.

With the information Sam knew, knowing that the vampires had the same type of technology, and one of the great vampire minds was working with the Dalki, there was a good chance this was true. Sam took this more as a fact rather than a guess, and told everyone to start using sh.i.p.s more rather than the teleporters.

"It looks like we're nearly here." Linda said.

Looking out the window, they could see a large space ship nearly as big as the Bertha the Cursed faction used, if not bigger. It was a strange design making it look more like a floating island. Not fast moving but looked impenetrable at the same time, a place suited more for defensive measures than anything.

It was quite the distance away, so it was hard to get a scale of the actual size of the thing, but even though it wasn't near the planet they were going to, they could see it off in the distance.

"What's that thing?" Peter asked.

"That's the Graylash family's main ship. It looks a bit odd right. It looks like a city with temples built on top of it. I actually heard that it was an island that was part of earth, and it used to be placed there. I guess Sam was right that there worried that an attack might happen." Linda replied.

"The Graylash family, that Owen is certainly an interesting character." Eno commented from the back of the ship. Currently, he wasn't looking like his usual self. His face was by far younger, a young middle aged man, he had changed his hair to a dark blue and his moustache was no longer there either. The only thing that was similar was his ponytail hairstyle.

“Out of curiosity, was the Graylash family never an option. I know Owen is strong, couldn’t he and his people get stronger with your help though?” Quinn asked.

“Ah yes, the Graylash family is an interesting one. As you may know with each of the families I have aided them for a long time, to the point where they are today. Even that damn Trudream you seem to hate so much, but as for the Graylash family, I didn’t play a part in it at all.

“They have since the beginning naturally evolved on their own. I still don’t think they will be enough, but it is one of the families where my influence would have not helped at all.”

Taking those words in, Owen did always seem like a strange character but at the same time never a threat to Quinn. Although there was one thing troubling him when they fought against Hilston together.

‘Why didn’t he use his soul weapon back then, even though we were in such a serious situation?’

Finally, the ship was preparing to enter the planet’s atmosphere. From the outside it looked to be green in colour. The water seemed to reflect this, shining in the same way. As they got closer, giant strange plants that were all sorts of strange colours started to appear in their view.

Purple, red, yellow, while the ground was covered in tall brown grass that looked as if it was almost dying. There were sh.i.p.s stationed outside the planet as well, but an access code had been granted and the others knew that the cursed faction were arriving.

Finally, after descending and flying for a short while longer, they came across the shelter. The outside of the shelter was similar to ones they had seen before. With a large reinforced wall on the outside.

Only, on the wall there were far more faction members and mechs than usual, and direct members of the Graylash family could be seen standing on part of the walls. With this shelter, it seemed like they were unable to avoid some of the plantation or there were reasons as to why they couldn’t cut them down, so it was built partly into the shelter.

Quinn thought it looked quite nice, as some of the shelters were plain looking, but here there was a large pink tree in the centre with purple leaves fluttering about in this one. The size and equipment of the shelter classified it as a Rank A shelter.

It was placed on an orange portal planet. Only strong factions and Travellers would be able to venture out to hunt beasts. Although the Shelter wasn't the largest one they had come across, there seemed to be a good population living here, over ten thousand or so people.

Off to the side, there was a large field that was used for sh.i.p.s to land, and there were already quite a few there, as well as a group of people ready to greet them.

"Welcome Quinn, I believe we met before while you were working at the school." One of the men in white robes said walking forward. "It's also nice to see you again." The man smiled.

When Sil looked up, it took him a few seconds but he really did know this person. This was Robin Graylash. One of the head generals that had been invited to do a little demonstration in one of the elemental classes.

From Quinn's duties he had met the other head generals from time to time, but didn't talk with them much. The two of them shook hands and smiled at each other.

"I see the Graylash family didn't just send anybody in either. It will be great to have your support." Quinn said.

While those from the Graylash family were respectful to Quinn and seemed to be happy to see him, the other five Travelers that had been brought along with him weren't exactly welcoming him with open arms. Although they knew their place and soon came over giving a bow down.

"These people are from the Orbus faction that was stationed here." Robin explained. "They work for the Graylash family and will be the ones looking after us while we are in the shelter."

All of the men had bowed down to Quinn to greet the world leader, apart from one. A young man who had his arms crossed and bags under his eyes as if he had been having many sleepless nights.

"Please allow me to say what's on my mind, sir." The man said, looking at Quinn.

He still wasn't used to this, but now as one of the world leaders, he realised that others couldn't just say what they wanted to him, unless they wished to start a war.

"I hope you won't go back on your word and I am free to say what I want. I am Ko, leader of the Orbus faction. However, I don't like the fact that the Cursed faction seem to be having so much free time that even a world leader is able to come down here.

"I feel like this is just putting pressure on the Graylash family to hand over the beast crystal to you once it has been obtained. At the same time, you are a person younger than myself, and you are meant to take command?"

"At your age, how many battles have you fought in? Do you even know how to lead or do you just rely on others around you."

As the man continued, Quinn could see that a temper was rising in Robin, it almost looked like he was going to zap the man to stop him, but Quinn nodded in his direction when the two of them made eye contact. It was okay, this man just didn't understand and people shouldn't be punished because they had different views or thoughts.

"On top of that, I have heard about your unhandy methods, summoning beasts on the other Shelters. If things don't go your way, will you be doing it he-" Ko's speech had stopped while he was in the middle of talking.

While Quinn had made sure Robin was not to get involved, he had forgotten about another person, who currently had his hand wrapped around Ko's mouth holding his jaw in place so he couldn't say another word.

"Don't you think it just got a bit quiet around here?" Peter said, smiling at the other men behind him.

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

– Working together

The group were travelling in a medium sized ship towards their destination. The planet was owned by the Graylash family so they didn't have a teleporter on board. Of course, they could have traveled to a closer planet owned by the Graylash family and teleported from there, but at the moment most of the factions were traveling using space sh.i.p.s.

This was apparent just on their journey, nearly every planet they went by had large forces of sh.i.p.s protecting them, ready to act on a moment's notice. This was actually advice given by Oscar. After not being able to use teleporters on planet Caladi, they feared that the Dalki now had some sort of teleportation jamming device.

With the information Sam knew, knowing that the vampires had the same type of technology, and one of the great vampire minds was working with the Dalki, there was a good chance this was true. Sam took this more as a fact rather than a guess, and told everyone to start using sh.i.p.s more rather than the teleporters.

"It looks like we're nearly here." Linda said.

Looking out the window, they could see a large space ship nearly as big as the Bertha the Cursed faction used, if not bigger. It was a strange design making it look more like a floating island. Not fast moving but looked impenetrable at the same time, a place suited more for defensive measures than anything.

It was quite the distance away, so it was hard to get a scale of the actual size of the thing, but even though it wasn't near the planet they were going to, they could see it off in the distance.

"What's that thing?" Peter asked.

"That's the Graylash family's main ship. It looks a bit odd right. It looks like a city with temples built on top of it. I actually heard that it was an island that was part of earth, and it used to be placed there. I guess Sam was right that there worried that an attack might happen." Linda replied.

“The Graylash family, that Owen is certainly an interesting character.” Eno commented from the back of the ship. Currently, he wasn’t looking like his usual self. His face was by far younger, a young middle aged man, he had changed his hair to a dark blue and his moustache was no longer there either. The only thing that was similar was his ponytail hairstyle.

“Out of curiosity, was the Graylash family never an option. I know Owen is strong, couldn’t he and his people get stronger with your help though?” Quinn asked.

“Ah yes, the Graylash family is an interesting one. As you may know with each of the families I have aided them for a long time, to the point where they are today. Even that damn Trudream you seem to hate so much, but as for the Graylash family, I didn’t play a part in it at all.

“They have since the beginning naturally evolved on their own. I still don’t think they will be enough, but it is one of the families where my influence would have not helped at all.”

Taking those words in, Owen did always seem like a strange character but at the same time never a threat to Quinn. Although there was one thing troubling him when they fought against Hilston together.

‘Why didn’t he use his soul weapon back then, even though we were in such a serious situation?’

Finally, the ship was preparing to enter the planet’s atmosphere. From the outside it looked to be green in colour. The water seemed to reflect this, shining in the same way. As they got closer, giant strange plants that were all sorts of strange colours started to appear in their view.

Purple, red, yellow, while the ground was covered in tall brown grass that looked as if it was almost dying. There were sh.i.p.s stationed outside the planet as well, but an access code had been granted and the others knew that the cursed faction were arriving.

Finally, after descending and flying for a short while longer, they came across the shelter. The outside of the shelter was similar to ones they had seen before. With a large reinforced wall on the outside.

Only, on the wall there were far more faction members and mechs than usual, and direct members of the Graylash family could be seen standing on part of the walls. With this shelter, it seemed like they

were unable to avoid some of the plantation or there were reasons as to why they couldn't cut them down, so it was built partly into the shelter.

Quinn thought it looked quite nice, as some of the shelters were plain looking, but here there was a large pink tree in the centre with purple leaves fluttering about in this one. The size and equipment of the shelter classified it as a Rank A shelter.

It was placed on an orange portal planet. Only strong factions and Travellers would be able to venture out to hunt beasts. Although the Shelter wasn't the largest one they had come across, there seemed to be a good population living here, over ten thousand or so people.

Off to the side, there was a large field that was used for sh.i.p.s to land, and there were already quite a few there, as well as a group of people ready to greet them.

"Welcome Quinn, I believe we met before while you were working at the school." One of the men in white robes said walking forward. "It's also nice to see you again." The man smiled.

When Sil looked up, it took him a few seconds but he really did know this person. This was Robin Graylash. One of the head generals that had been invited to do a little demonstration in one of the elemental classes.

From Quinn's duties he had met the other head generals from time to time, but didn't talk with them much. The two of them shook hands and smiled at each other.

"I see the Graylash family didn't just send anybody in either. It will be great to have your support." Quinn said.

While those from the Graylash family were respectful to Quinn and seemed to be happy to see him, the other five Travelers that had been brought along with him weren't exactly welcoming him with open arms. Although they knew their place and soon came over giving a bow down.

"These people are from the Orbus faction that was stationed here." Robin explained. "They work for the Graylash family and will be the ones looking after us while we are in the shelter."

All of the men had bowed down to Quinn to greet the world leader, apart from one. A young man who had his arms crossed and bags under his eyes as if he had been having many sleepless nights.

“Please allow me to say what’s on my mind, sir.” The man said, looking at Quinn.

He still wasn’t used to this, but now as one of the world leaders, he realised that others couldn’t just say what they wanted to him, unless they wished to start a war.

“I hope you won’t go back on your word and I am free to say what I want. I am Ko, leader of the Orbus faction. However, I don’t like the fact that the Cursed faction seem to be having so much free time that even a world leader is able to come down here.

“I feel like this is just putting pressure on the Graylash family to hand over the beast crystal to you once it has been obtained. At the same time, you are a person younger than myself, and you are meant to take command?”

“At your age, how many battles have you fought in? Do you even know how to lead or do you just rely on others around you.”

As the man continued, Quinn could see that a temper was rising in Robin, it almost looked like he was going to zapp the man to stop him, but Quinn nodded in his direction when the two of them made eye contact. It was okay, this man just didn’t understand and people shouldn’t be punished because they had different views or thoughts.

“On top of that, I have heard about your unhande methods, summoning beasts on the other Shelters. If things don’t go your way, will you be doing it he-” Ko’s speech had stopped while he was in the middle of talking.

While Quinn had made sure Robin was not to get involved, he had forgotten about another person, who currently had his hand wrapped around Ko’s mouth holding his jaw in place so he couldn’t say another word.

“Don’t you think it just got a bit quiet around here?” Peter said, smiling at the other men behind him.

– Tired eyes

Everyone watched as they saw Peter lift up Ko's body in the air from his mouth. The grip around his jaw was just hard enough to not allow him to move it, or say anything else. While at the same he wasn't using his full strength. Otherwise, his jaw would have been crushed by now.

The other four men that had come with him were also members of the Orbus faction, and seeing one of their trusted allies being hurt by what they only saw as a stranger, they immediately started to pull out their beast weapons and activated their abilities.

"Put your weapons down. It's an order!" Robin shouted, having enough.

At the same time, Quinn quickly had gone over to Peter and had his hand on his shoulder.

"I think it might be best if you let him go as well."

It wasn't a telling off, as Quinn knew why Peter had done what he did and the others weren't going to stop Peter either.

Peter looked at the man for a second, before releasing him, allowing him to fall on the floor, but as soon as he was let free. Ko attempted to grab something from his side, but before he could, Quinn held onto his hand.

"Are you sure you want to do that?" Quinn said. "Your life was just spared and think about what would happen if you were to act out again."

When the tension and pressure from Ko went away, Quinn let go as well moving back to the others along with Peter.

“Ko, that was completely out of order. If you were to act like this with Owen here, I would have hit you myself.” Robin said.

Hearing this, Ko immediately bowed down.

“I apologise to the Cursed faction leader. What I said was out of order.” Ko said, but the apology didn’t exactly seem urgent or sincere. It was more like he was forced to do it.

Peter was tempted to go in again, but this time, Linda grabbed him as she kept an eye on him.

Stretching his Jaw, Ko felt a bit of pain and that wasn’t the only area either, it was the same with his forearm as well.

‘I’m an A class Traveller and have been protecting this place for years and this is how we get treated! The Graylash family are treating an outside faction better than their own.’ Ko thought. ‘And that guy, I didn’t even see him move and he grabbed my Jaw, I thought the Cursed faction only had a few strong ones?’

Trying to forget about what happened, Ko was asked by Robin to lead the way, and give the group a tour around the Shelter. At the same time, they would ask details about the Demon tier beast or any information they had on it.

As soon as they entered the Shelter though, the others with their great hearing couldn’t help but listen in on what the others were saying about them.

“That’s him, the Cursed faction leader! He’s also one of the world leaders.”

“Don’t you think he looks a bit young? How can someone like that have the power to control one third of the human forces?”

“He is young, didn’t you know, even if he looks young his actual age is a lot younger, he would have only just graduated from the military school, a genius in the rising.”

“A genius huh, so much so that they have decided to send him here rather than deal with the Dalki?”

“Stop being stupid, are you really a Traveller? You should know how difficult a Demon tier beast is, would you rather fight a Dalki or a Demon tier? The weapon created will also help support us for the rest of the war.”

What Quinn was pleased with, was that at least some people seemed to know the importance and dangers of the task. However, if they knew what they had planned to do with the Demon tier crystal, then maybe more would be upset about it.

‘Even with an a.d.u.l.t face they are all calling you baby face.’ Vincent commented. ‘You know with your Qi control, and control of your body maybe you could make yourself look older, or you could always use the earth mask from Peter to change your appearance.’

‘It’s okay, I think it’s important that people know it’s really me here.’ Quinn replied. ‘Could you imagine what they would have done if they thought I was someone else, there would have been a fight back there.’

“This place is cool,” Fex said. “It reminds me of the familiar world with all the colourful plants.”

“It certainly is different.” Wevil replied. “Have you noticed the buildings though, and the outside walls.”

“Yes, and even the people, although they were interested in us at first they seem to be concerned about something else. A little on edge.” Linda said. “Is it the demon tier beast?”

“I also recognised that some of them have bags under their eyes, like the faction leader, Ko. Are they all having trouble sleeping?” Layla whispered.

Quinn had noticed it as well, although from the outside the place was well guarded and there were plenty of strong Travelers and faction members of Orbus. The people were wearing their beast gear even inside the Shelter. This wasn’t too unusual if it was a few but nearly every single person, even those that looked like civilians. Some of the buildings appeared damaged, as if they had just suffered an attack not too long ago.

After walking through the large Shelter and being shown the main places, they finally went towards the centre where the large tree with pink leaves could be seen. It was taller than the shelter walls and was as thick as a truck.

From the tree, a pathway where the long grass was cut led up to the faction hall.

Heading inside the Faction building, the reaction was pretty much the same from all those outside, but they quickly headed to a room where they sat around a round table and could get straight to business. Quickly moving towards Quinn, Layla decided to sit next to him, even though she hadn't said much on this trip, and Eno decided to sit on the other side.

They had asked if Hayley had arrived yet, since she was meant to meet the group, but it appeared she still hadn't done so.

"So there are a few things that will need to be discussed today," Robin stated. "First, we will let you know everything we know about this planet and about the Demon tier beast. After that, we need to discuss how we decide fairly who will get what rewards. After all, three groups in particular will be part of this hunt, and everyone deserves their fair share. The Orbus faction, the Graylash family, and the Cursed faction. Yes, the Orbus faction are part of the Graylash group so we will need to take that into consideration as well.

"Now, thanks to the device the Cursed faction has given us we were able to discover the energy of a Demon tier beast present on this planet. Unfortunately, somehow the Demon tier beast appears to appear in certain spots and then disappear.

"These spots follow no pattern, so it will be quite hard trying to find it. At the same time, according to Orbus, this Shelter has been facing its own problems, and I'll leave it with Ko to discuss the rest."

Ko stood up and looked at the others before replying.

"First, before we do anything, there is a serious problem plaguing this Shelter. I'm sure some of you have noticed the destroyed buildings and such. That's because this Shelter seems to be targeted.

“The beasts have been coming here often in waves, and all of the Travellers have had to defend it. Now, this has happened since the existence of the Shelter. It became popular with Travellers since they could hunt without having to move far away, but recently higher and higher tiers have been coming along with larger forces. Recently we even had an attack from a legendary tier.” Ko Explained.

“How frequent are these attacks?” Linda asked.

“The time frame has been getting shorter and shorter, but at the moment, it seems to be every week or so. We have a theory that it is possibly the Demon tier beasts doing. Perhaps it’s moving into other beasts territory and sending them here. Another important factor that we are unsure is related or not, is that every time we are attacked, people from the Shelter appear to go missing.” Ko replied.

“Missing?” Wevil said. “You don’t mean killed, but you just have no trace of where they have gone?”

“Maybe they were eaten,” Peter said, saying it like it was no big deal.

“Maybe you ate them, am I right!” Fex joked, raising his hand expecting someone to high five him, but then when he was the only one laughing, he realised that for one, no one else from the other groups would know what he meant by this, and perhaps his joke was a bit too far.

“You guys need to take this matter more seriously,” Ko said, shaking his head. “Because of this, we can only send a small team out to look for the Demon tier beasts, and with more beasts and more dangerous beasts coming, we might need more help from you guys here.

“Can I ask, when is the rest of the Cursed faction coming?”

The others looked at each other, and even Robin was pulling an awkward face.

“Actually, this is everyone that will be taking part in the hunt from the Cursed faction,” Quinn replied.

“What, you only brought seven of you! How are you meant to take on a Demon tier beast with just the seven of you?!”

“I assure you that the people I have brought aren’t ordinary people,” Quinn said.

“We can come up with a way to track the Demon tier beast,” Eno spoke. “We can do all the hard work, and you guys can stay here and look after the Shelter. We came here to hunt for the Demon tier beast, not to protect the Shelter. Who knows, maybe the Demon tier beast will make its way here.” Eno smiled.

After he finished speaking, a vibration was felt in the rooms, and a loud explosion was heard outside. Soon the sound of multiple explosions could be heard.

Storming into the room was one of the faction members covered in sweat.

“Sir Ko, we need your help urgently. Outside we are being attacked again! The beasts are raiding us right now! And sir, they have a Demi-god tier beast with them!”

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it’s only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Tired eyes

Everyone watched as they saw Peter lift up Ko’s body in the air from his mouth. The grip around his jaw was just hard enough to not allow him to move it, or say anything else. While at the same he wasn’t using his full strength. Otherwise, his jaw would have been crushed by now.

The other four men that had come with him were also members of the Orbus faction, and seeing one of their trusted allies being hurt by what they only saw as a stranger, they immediately started to pull out their beast weapons and activated their abilities.

“Put your weapons down. It’s an order!” Robin shouted, having enough.

At the same time, Quinn quickly had gone over to Peter and had his hand on his shoulder.

“I think it might be best if you let him go as well.”

It wasn’t a telling off, as Quinn knew why Peter had done what he did and the others weren’t going to stop Peter either.

Peter looked at the man for a second, before releasing him, allowing him to fall on the floor, but as soon as he was let free. Ko attempted to grab something from his side, but before he could, Quinn held onto his hand.

“Are you sure you want to do that?” Quinn said. “Your life was just spared and think about what would happen if you were to act out again.”

When the tension and pressure from Ko went away, Quinn let go as well moving back to the others along with Peter.

“Ko, that was completely out of order. If you were to act like this with Owen here, I would have hit you myself.” Robin said.

Hearing this, Ko immediately bowed down.

“I apologise to the Cursed faction leader. What I said was out of order.” Ko said, but the apology didn’t exactly seem urgent or sincere. It was more like he was forced to do it.

Peter was tempted to go in again, but this time, Linda grabbed him as she kept an eye on him.

Stretching his Jaw, Ko felt a bit of pain and that wasn't the only area either, it was the same with his forearm as well.

'I'm an A class Traveller and have been protecting this place for years and this is how we get treated! The Graylash family are treating an outside faction better than their own.' Ko thought. 'And that guy, I didn't even see him move and he grabbed my Jaw, I thought the Cursed faction only had a few strong ones?'

Trying to forget about what happened, Ko was asked by Robin to lead the way, and give the group a tour around the Shelter. At the same time, they would ask details about the Demon tier beast or any information they had on it.

As soon as they entered the Shelter though, the others with their great hearing couldn't help but listen in on what the others were saying about them.

"That's him, the Cursed faction leader!?! He's also one of the world leaders."

"Don't you think he looks a bit young? How can someone like that have the power to control one third of the human forces?"

"He is young, didn't you know, even if he looks young his actual age is a lot younger, he would have only just graduated from the military school, a genius in the rising."

"A genius huh, so much so that they have decided to send him here rather than deal with the Dalki?"

"Stop being stupid, are you really a Traveller? You should know how difficult a Demon tier beast is, would you rather fight a Dalki or a Demon tier? The weapon created will also help support us for the rest of the war."

What Quinn was pleased with, was that at least some people seemed to know the importance and dangers of the task. However, if they knew what they had planned to do with the Demon tier crystal, then maybe more would be upset about it.

'Even with an a.d.u.l.t face they are all calling you baby face.' Vincent commented. 'You know with your Qi control, and control of your body maybe you could make yourself look older, or you could always use the earth mask from Peter to change your appearance.'

'It's okay, I think it's important that people know it's really me here.' Quinn replied. 'Could you imagine what they would have done if they thought I was someone else, there would have been a fight back there.'

"This place is cool," Fex said. "It reminds me of the familiar world with all the colourful plants."

"It certainly is different." Wevil replied. "Have you noticed the buildings though, and the outside walls."

"Yes, and even the people, although they were interested in us at first they seem to be concerned about something else. A little on edge." Linda said. "Is it the demon tier beast?"

"I also recognised that some of them have bags under their eyes, like the faction leader, Ko. Are they all having trouble sleeping?" Layla whispered.

Quinn had noticed it as well, although from the outside the place was well guarded and there were plenty of strong Travelers and faction members of Orbus. The people were wearing their beast gear even inside the Shelter. This wasn't too unusual if it was a few but nearly every single person, even those that looked like civilians. Some of the buildings appeared damaged, as if they had just suffered an attack not too long ago.

After walking through the large Shelter and being shown the main places, they finally went towards the centre where the large tree with pink leaves could be seen. It was taller than the shelter walls and was as thick as a truck.

From the tree, a pathway where the long grass was cut led up to the faction hall.

Heading inside the Faction building, the reaction was pretty much the same from all those outside, but they quickly headed to a room where they sat around a round table and could get straight to business.

Quickly moving towards Quinn, Layla decided to sit next to him, even though she hadn't said much on this trip, and Eno decided to sit on the other side.

They had asked if Hayley had arrived yet, since she was meant to meet the group, but it appeared she still hadn't done so.

"So there are a few things that will need to be discussed today," Robin stated. "First, we will let you know everything we know about this planet and about the Demon tier beast. After that, we need to discuss how we decide fairly who will get what rewards. After all, three groups in particular will be part of this hunt, and everyone deserves their fair share. The Orbus faction, the Graylash family, and the Cursed faction. Yes, the Orbus faction are part of the Graylash group so we will need to take that into consideration as well.

"Now, thanks to the device the Cursed faction has given us we were able to discover the energy of a Demon tier beast present on this planet. Unfortunately, somehow the Demon tier beast appears to appear in certain spots and then disappear.

"These spots follow no pattern, so it will be quite hard trying to find it. At the same time, according to Orbus, this Shelter has been facing its own problems, and I'll leave it with Ko to discuss the rest."

Ko stood up and looked at the others before replying.

"First, before we do anything, there is a serious problem plaguing this Shelter. I'm sure some of you have noticed the destroyed buildings and such. That's because this Shelter seems to be targeted.

"The beasts have been coming here often in waves, and all of the Travellers have had to defend it. Now, this has happened since the existence of the Shelter. It became popular with Travellers since they could hunt without having to move far away, but recently higher and higher tiers have been coming along with larger forces. Recently we even had an attack from a legendary tier." Ko Explained.

"How frequent are these attacks?" Linda asked.

"The time frame has been getting shorter and shorter, but at the moment, it seems to be every week or so. We have a theory that it is possibly the Demon tier beasts doing. Perhaps it's moving into other

beasts territory and sending them here. Another important factor that we are unsure is related or not, is that every time we are attacked, people from the Shelter appear to go missing.” Ko replied.

“Missing?” Wevil said. “You don’t mean killed, but you just have no trace of where they have gone?”

“Maybe they were eaten,” Peter said, saying it like it was no big deal.

“Maybe you ate them, am I right!” Fex joked, raising his hand expecting someone to high five him, but then when he was the only one laughing, he realised that for one, no one else from the other groups would know what he meant by this, and perhaps his joke was a bit too far.

“You guys need to take this matter more seriously,” Ko said, shaking his head. “Because of this, we can only send a small team out to look for the Demon tier beasts, and with more beasts and more dangerous beasts coming, we might need more help from you guys here.

“Can I ask, when is the rest of the Cursed faction coming?”

The others looked at each other, and even Robin was pulling an awkward face.

“Actually, this is everyone that will be taking part in the hunt from the Cursed faction,” Quinn replied.

“What, you only brought seven of you! How are you meant to take on a Demon tier beast with just the seven of you?!”

“I assure you that the people I have brought aren’t ordinary people,” Quinn said.

“We can come up with a way to track the Demon tier beast,” Eno spoke. “We can do all the hard work, and you guys can stay here and look after the Shelter. We came here to hunt for the Demon tier beast, not to protect the Shelter. Who knows, maybe the Demon tier beast will make its way here.” Eno smiled.

After he finished speaking, a vibration was felt in the rooms, and a loud explosion was heard outside. Soon the sound of multiple explosions could be heard.

Storming into the room was one of the faction members covered in sweat.

“Sir Ko, we need your help urgently. Outside we are being attacked again! The beasts are raiding us right now! And sir, they have a Demi-god tier beast with them!”

My Vampire System Chapter 1048

– The best place to be

The meeting was halted at that moment, as the Orbus members quickly ran out without thinking much about it. While Robin had remained calm, talking to his men to report on the full situation just so they knew exactly what they were going up against.

“Sir, it seems like our members are having trouble dealing with the Demi-god tier beast.” One of the Graylash said, coming back in after seeing what the situation was like.

While the Cursed members were left in the room on their own, being the last ones to act.

“Quinn, are we going to help them?” Layla asked.

“Of course we are. Find whatever beasts you can deal with and try to save as many lives as possible. There are a lot of fighters in this Shelter, so I’m sure they can handle themselves. We will mainly look after the families.” Quinn ordered. “However, the most important order of them all is to not to die. If you die, then many lives will be lost. Remember that”

“Strong words,” Eno said.

The others nodded, and those with the shadow power used their shadow equip to put on their high level beast equipment.

Once outside, they could see flying beasts in the air hovering around the Shelter. They would swoop in from time to time, planning their attack circling around. There were so many that a large shadow was cast over the Shelter. Some beasts with powerful legs were able to leap up in the air and attempted to enter the Shelter that way, while others had found ways to bypass the walls.

It wasn't long since the attack had been announced, and yet already many beasts had entered the place. On the walls of the Shelter, there were around ten Graylash members stationed on all four walls. They were using their lightning abilities well to stop the beasts from outside, and also those from above while ignoring those inside.

The group were hesitant about where to go or what to do, Then suddenly leaping up in the air a giant frog like beast with small arms, and a long neck came towards them, before it could reach them, a single line of red aura had hit the beast and sliced it in half.

The others looked at Quinn, but the attack hadn't come from him. It was from Eno.

"Are you really just going to stand around? Can't you hear the cries of the people? You are all lucky that it is just beasts attacking, for if it was the Dalki, everything would have been destroyed in seconds."

Eno was right, and everyone else knew it. Soon the others went to help the people as best they could, and were aiming for the higher tier beast as the Travelers were able to handle the others.

"Wait, Sil you come with me," Quinn said. "I'm sure they're going to need your help."

Looking over, Quinn could see where Ko, the Orbus faction leader and Robin, the Graylash Head genreal, had gone.

It was towards the North wall, that was where the most energy was being felt. Which most likely meant it was where the Demi-god tier beast was as well. On top of that, there was no one in the Cursed faction at the moment Sil could copy abilities from. If he wanted to help, he needed powers and strong ones at that.

The Cursed faction members had decided to split up into two groups. Wevil and Linda had gone off together to reinforce one of the walls where it looked like most of the beasts were coming in from. When they reached the wall they could see why they were facing trouble.

“We have to kill the king tier beast quickly and block the entrance!” An Orbus leader shouted. He was in pain, fighting against a large minotaur. The beast was larger than a Dalki, and muscular beyond belief. A king tier beast that was filled with rage and had massive amounts of brute strength.

The problem was getting close to the thing, without dying from one swipe of its large hands. The two king tier minotaurs were the ones responsible for destroying the gate in the first place. From a distance they had knelt down charging the muscles in their legs, before blasting off banging into the wall not caring about their bodies.

However, the faction members were able to survive against the minotaurs thanks to their slow movements. Unlike their initial attack it looked like the other movements were quite slow but their hides were tough.

Seeing all the beasts go past them, they couldn't help but feel pain as they saw the amount of beasts pouring in through the gates.

“I'm sorry!” The commander at the gate shouted, as he was ready to risk his life to take down the beasts, but suddenly. He saw a group of beasts fly through the air getting knocked back meters away.

“What happened?” When turning around, he could see a large woman in beautiful crimson red beast gear holding a club in her hand. Linda had transformed and was using her great strength to not allow any more beasts through the gates. With every swing she would be able to kill a group of them, and even the force caused the beasts to hesitate moving in any further.

“Who is that? I don't remember anyone from the Orbus faction having that ability or that strength. I will have to thank them later, for now I need to fight what is in front of me!” The man said turning around, but then could see a slight small haired green man touching his body.

“I just need a little boost.” Wevil said, as the man felt the energy leaving his body through the touch of the person, another one he didn't recognise.

Wevil, absorbing a little bit of blood through touch, knew he would need a boost. It was only later he found that unlike vampires that just used blood for feeding. Wevil could also use it to power his transformed state.

Running forward he avoided the beast's swings with his great speed, and jumped onto the minotaurs arm running up it. Pulling out his daggers, the head and his body started to transform into the tiger beetle form. When he leapt up in the air, his body had finished its transformation. Midway up the air, they were wondering what would happen, but one of Wevil's legs kicked at a speed impossible for the human eye to see, and a bang was heard.

Somehow, the force of the air itself was hit, speeding Wevil up and holding his two daggers he had gone right through the minotaur's head through to the other side, killing it.

'Good thing that beast was distracted.' Wevil thought.

Inside the Shelter itself, Layla, Peter and Fex, were together. Peter was able to deal with most beasts using his fists. Ripping them with his b.a.r.e hands. There weren't many strong beasts inside the Shelter and he thought it was quicker to deal with them with his hands rather than use his weapons. It looked like it was working. As for Fex, he was by his side pulling the beasts in the Sky down, and doing more of a rescue job when he could. Some of the people were trapped under buildings, and needed help.

At the same time, using her arrows, Layla would focus on the flying beast heading there way. With Peter's strength and speed, there was no need for her to transform into her other forms.

'I can still help, I can still save people lives!' Layla thought as she fired off an arrow, and using her ability she changed its direction so it could go through a gorilla looking beast's eyes, stopping them before they were to slam down on a traveller which had fallen.

Back at the north gate, Eno, Sil, and Quinn had arrived. Grabbing Sil, Quinn quickly jumped up the wall and now they could see everything. Ko, and Robin were still on the wall planning what to do as they watched the Demi-god tiers movements. They hadn't gone into battle just yet.

The second Quinn saw the beast, he could tell it was at the Demi-god tier level, having met one once before. It had two giant wings that were covered in a soft white fur, and both of them looked to be glowing in a strange light. It looked like a giant white furry moth.

"I think we have watched the beast long enough!" Ko shouted. "With the three of us here, we should be able to beat it!"

However, Eno looked towards Quinn.

"Quinn, are you sure this is the right place to be? Sometimes the loudest place is not the one a person should focus on."

n was wondering what Eno was talking about, there was a Demi-god beast in front of them. If not this place then where would he need to be, in the Shelter with the people? Helping the others.

Because of this, Quinn closed his eyes and tried to listen out, to see if there was anything else. Then, from the forest just outside the east gate of the Shelter. He could hear it, feel the loud vibrations coming from that direction.

"Sil, Eno, help them and deal with the Demi-god tier beast here. I am needed somewhere else!" Quinn said, and using the shadow travel he had disappeared.

"Hey, what are you doing!" Ko shouted as he was ready to just jump in. He was confident in his strength but had never fought against a Demi-god tier before. He thought at least with the Cursed faction leader who had supposedly killed many Dalki, and the Graylash head general who he already knew their strength, they could deal with it quickly, but now he had just run off.

"That damn coward!" Co shouted.

Meanwhile, Quinn had already exited out of the Shelter and had equipped on his new Legendary tier gear, covering his whole body in silver with spiralling blue armour. The fur could be seen in certain places, and he looked a bit out of place in the colourful forest, but it didn't matter.

“Who would have thought that there would be two Demi-god tier beasts attacking this place.”

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– The best place to be

The meeting was halted at that moment, as the Orbus members quickly ran out without thinking much about it. While Robin had remained calm, talking to his men to report on the full situation just so they knew exactly what they were going up against.

“Sir, it seems like our members are having trouble dealing with the Demi-god tier beast.” One of the Graylash said, coming back in after seeing what the situation was like.

While the Cursed members were left in the room on their own, being the last ones to act.

“Quinn, are we going to help them?” Layla asked.

“Of course we are. Find whatever beasts you can deal with and try to save as many lives as possible. There are a lot of fighters in this Shelter, so I'm sure they can handle themselves. We will mainly look after the families.” Quinn ordered. “However, the most important order of them all is to not to die. If you die, then many lives will be lost. Remember that”

“Strong words,” Eno said.

The others nodded, and those with the shadow power used their shadow equip to put on their high level beast equipment.

Once outside, they could see flying beasts in the air hovering around the Shelter. They would swoop in from time to time, planning their attack circling around. There were so many that a large shadow was cast over the Shelter. Some beasts with powerful legs were able to leap up in the air and attempted to enter the Shelter that way, while others had found ways to bypass the walls.

It wasn't long since the attack had been announced, and yet already many beasts had entered the place. On the walls of the Shelter, there were around ten Graylash members stationed on all four walls. They were using their lightning abilities well to stop the beasts from outside, and also those from above while ignoring those inside.

The group were hesitant about where to go or what to do, Then suddenly leaping up in the air a giant frog like beast with small arms, and a long neck came towards them, before it could reach them, a single line of red aura had hit the beast and sliced it in half.

The others looked at Quinn, but the attack hadn't come from him. It was from Eno.

“Are you really just going to stand around? Can't you hear the cries of the people? You are all lucky that it is just beasts attacking, for if it was the Dalki, everything would have been destroyed in seconds.”

Eno was right, and everyone else knew it. Soon the others went to help the people as best they could, and were aiming for the higher tier beast as the Travelers were able to handle the others.

“Wait, Sil you come with me,” Quinn said. “I'm sure they're going to need your help.”

Looking over, Quinn could see where Ko, the Orbus faction leader and Robin, the Graylash Head genreal, had gone.

It was towards the North wall, that was where the most energy was being felt. Which most likely meant it was where the Demi-god tier beast was as well. On top of that, there was no one in the Cursed faction at the moment Sil could copy abilities from. If he wanted to help, he needed powers and strong ones at that.

--

The Cursed faction members had decided to split up into two groups. Wevil and Linda had gone off together to reinforce one of the walls where it looked like most of the beasts were coming in from. When they reached the wall they could see why they were facing trouble.

“We have to kill the king tier beast quickly and block the entrance!” An Orbus leader shouted. He was in pain, fighting against a large minotaur. The beast was larger than a Dalki, and muscular beyond belief. A king tier beast that was filled with rage and had massive amounts of brute strength.

The problem was getting close to the thing, without dying from one swipe of its large hands. The two king tier minotaurs were the ones responsible for destroying the gate in the first place. From a distance they had knelt down charging the muscles in their legs, before blasting off banging into the wall not caring about their bodies.

However, the faction members were able to survive against the minotaurs thanks to their slow movements. Unlike their initial attack it looked like the other movements were quite slow but their hides were tough.

Seeing all the beasts go past them, they couldn't help but feel pain as they saw the amount of beasts pouring in through the gates.

“I'm sorry!” The commander at the gate shouted, as he was ready to risk his life to take down the beasts, but suddenly. He saw a group of beasts fly through the air getting knocked back meters away.

“What happened?” When turning around, he could see a large woman in beautiful crimson red beast gear holding a club in her hand. Linda had transformed and was using her great strength to not allow any more beasts through the gates. With every swing she would be able to kill a group of them, and even the force caused the beasts to hesitate moving in any further.

“Who is that? I don’t remember anyone from the Orbus faction having that ability or that strength. I will have to thank them later, for now I need to fight what is in front of me!” The man said turning around, but then could see a slight small haired green man touching his body.

“I just need a little boost.” Wevil said, as the man felt the energy leaving his body through the touch of the person, another one he didn’t recognise.

Wevil, absorbing a little bit of blood through touch, knew he would need a boost. It was only later he found that unlike vampires that just used blood for feeding. Wevil could also use it to power his transformed state.

Running forward he avoided the beast’s swings with his great speed, and jumped onto the minotaur’s arm running up it. Pulling out his daggers, the head and his body started to transform into the tiger beetle form. When he leapt up in the air, his body had finished its transformation. Midway up the air, they were wondering what would happen, but one of Wevil’s legs kicked at a speed impossible for the human eye to see, and a bang was heard.

Somehow, the force of the air itself was hit, speeding Wevil up and holding his two daggers he had gone right through the minotaur’s head through to the other side, killing it.

‘Good thing that beast was distracted.’ Wevil thought.

Inside the Shelter itself, Layla, Peter and Fex, were together. Peter was able to deal with most beasts using his fists. Ripping them with his b.a.r.e hands. There weren’t many strong beasts inside the Shelter and he thought it was quicker to deal with them with his hands rather than use his weapons. It looked like it was working. As for Fex, he was by his side pulling the beasts in the Sky down, and doing more of a rescue job when he could. Some of the people were trapped under buildings, and needed help.

At the same time, using her arrows, Layla would focus on the flying beast heading there way. With Peter’s strength and speed, there was no need for her to transform into her other forms.

'I can still help, I can still save people lives!' Layla thought as she fired off an arrow, and using her ability she changed its direction so it could go through a gorilla looking beast's eyes, stopping them before they were to slam down on a traveller which had fallen.

Back at the north gate, Eno, Sil, and Quinn had arrived. Grabbing Sil, Quinn quickly jumped up the wall and now they could see everything. Ko, and Robin were still on the wall planning what to do as they watched the Demi-god tiers movements. They hadn't gone into battle just yet.

The second Quinn saw the beast, he could tell it was at the Demi-god tier level, having met one once before. It had two giant wings that were covered in a soft white fur, and both of them looked to be glowing in a strange light. It looked like a giant white furry moth.

"I think we have watched the beast long enough!" Ko shouted. "With the three of us here, we should be able to beat it!"

However, Eno looked towards Quinn.

"Quinn, are you sure this is the right place to be? Sometimes the loudest place is not the one a person should focus on."

n was wondering what Eno was talking about, there was a Demi-god beast in front of them. If not this place then where would he need to be, in the Shelter with the people? Helping the others.

Because of this, Quinn closed his eyes and tried to listen out, to see if there was anything else. Then, from the forest just outside the east gate of the Shelter. He could hear it, feel the loud vibrations coming from that direction.

"Sil, Eno, help them and deal with the Demi-god tier beast here. I am needed somewhere else!" Quinn said, and using the shadow travel he had disappeared.

“Hey, what are you doing!” Ko shouted as he was ready to just jump in. He was confident in his strength but had never fought against a Demi-god tier before. He thought at least with the Cursed faction leader who had supposedly killed many Dalki, and the Graylash head general who he already knew their strength, they could deal with it quickly, but now he had just run off.

“That damn coward!” Co shouted.

Meanwhile, Quinn had already exited out of the Shelter and had equipped on his new Legendary tier gear, covering his whole body in silver with spiralling blue armour. The fur could be seen in certain places, and he looked a bit out of place in the colourful forest, but it didn't matter.

“Who would have thought that there would be two Demi-god tier beasts attacking this place.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1049

– Nitro accelerate

With Quinn having left the north gate, it left Ko, Robin and Sil to deal with the Demi-god tier beast that had the appearance of a giant white furry Moth. The three of them needed to act fast, as they could see a number of their people who were fighting the beast collapsing onto the ground.

They weren't dead, as they could still be seen breathing, but they still wouldn't wake up despite what was going on around them. One had even been hit while asleep. It was an attack that was partially deflected off one of the Moth's large wings. Yet, still they didn't wake up.

“We can not allow that thing to get into the Shelter. If it does, it will cause everyone else to fall asleep, then the rest of the other beasts will cause even more mayhem!” Robin claimed.

“What are we meant to do? Whoever gets within ten meters seems to be hit by the beast's fur that's shedding from its body. It looks impossible to avoid and hard to see. All our ranged attacks seem useless as well.” Ko explained.

The other Graylash members continued to fire lightning at the giant Moth, but it was seemingly doing nothing. As if it just tickled the beast. This was meant to be one of the strongest abilities out there.

Looking at the beast movements, Robin had noticed something. It hadn't taken flight even with the two giant wings. An aerial beast sometimes was more difficult, so why was it on the ground?

It looked like it was constantly moving, every time someone got close to a certain part of its body, protecting a certain place. At one point, one of the travellers had gotten close to its under part as it ran under its head, fighting the loss of energy. When this happened, it leapt back for the first time swinging its powerful wings forward. As soon as it was in the air, it spun so one could only see its back.

"It's the underbelly. I'm sure that is its weak point. With my soul weapon. I can create quite the powerful attack to damage it, but we will need someone to get close to it, and force it to show its belly" Robin explained.

Now the men that were continuing to fight the Moth were down to five. Pulling out his regular sword Ko had enough, and was about to jump off the wall, until he felt Sil grab his arm.

"What are you doing kid, get off me!" Ko shrugged it away. "If you're just going to stand here and be useless, be useless somewhere else!"

Ko then leapt off the wall, and stood in front of the gate, waiting for the right time to go in.

"Sil, is your name correct?" Robin said, turning to him. "Your power, if I fail, we might need to rely on you to finish the job. Owen told me a lot about you." Saying this, he held out his hand allowing Sil to touch him, and soon after he had leapt off the building as well.

Spirals of blue lightning started to surround Robin's arms, and legs as he activated his soul weapon, but this was only one part of it, he needed to activate the second part of it to truly use the move he wanted and he was relying on another for this part of the plan.

"Damn it, it looks like it was holding back on what it could do, but this is the only chance I'll have!" Ko shouted as he lifted his sword back in the air above his head, tilting his back.

The other men were quickly falling asleep after being hit by the fur, so he had no choice but to use this opening. Activating his ability, his weapon grew in size. Becoming almost as big as the Moth itself.

It was strange how one could still wield a beast weapon with its sheer size but the weight of the weapon had remained the same for Ko the ability user, only the size had changed. Swinging it down with all his might, hitting the Moth with a weapon this large would do something, and the Moth seemed to think this as well as it leapt backwards in the air.

The attack from Ko was fast, but the Demi-god tier beast was faster avoiding the blow. However, this was the plan in the first place. Now it was showing its white belly. It looked as if it was ready to turn around like before. Still, before it could, a large human sized blue lightning went straight past Ko's head and straight to the Moth, hitting it in the centre part of its belly just under its head.

An explosion of blue occurred with lightning strikes firing off into the air. More of the Moth's fur had been chucked everywhere. It fell to the floor rolling on the ground.

While Robin's arms and legs were glowing in blue colour and slowly fading.

He was huffing and panting as his soul weapon had taken a lot out of him, but what was worse, for him and Ko both of them had been hit by the explosion of fur, and they could feel their bodies getting tired by the second.

It was a strange force like a spell draining the energy from both of them, making them incredibly tired.

"What is this, I thought it might have been a sleeping effect, but that's not it at all!" Robin realised.

"It's what I thought, this Moth is draining the energy from everyone to heal itself and make itself stronger. This fur, there has to be a way to get rid of it!" Robin started to think. Making a quick decision he placed both of his hands on himself.

Usually, users of the lightning power coated themselves with lightning to avoid getting hurt. After all, their bodies were not made of lightning itself. This time he had done no such thing and shocked himself repeatedly, making the pierces of fur from the Moth fall off his body.

His drained energy hadn't returned, but it had finally stopped leaving him. Seeing Ko's eyes, starting to become drowsy, he quickly fired and shocked him as well. He screamed in pain, but the pieces of fur that covered his body had fallen.

"What do we do!" Ko shouted, leaning on his sword stuck in the ground. He hadn't used a lot of energy, but a lot of it had been drained, and he was relying on Robin for an answer. "The Moth looks like it's fine to me," Ko said.

The truth was, using a soul weapon took a lot of energy, and it was the same for Robin. It was meant to be a trump card in a fight, but he had wanted to get rid of it quickly. In the past, Robin had always fought with others to help him along the way but now he saw no way of getting out of this one, until several lightning strikes seemed to hit the Moth, and unlike the others, with each one, it was creating a wound on the creature no matter where it hit.

Walking past Ko, Sil was seen with his hands out.

'He has lightning powers? But he isn't part of the Graylash family! Didn't the Cursed bring him along?' Ko thought.

"Where have you been?" Robin asked, smiling back at Sil.

"I had to get a few more abilities to make your powers stronger. It's not the same as the world leaders, but it should be enough!" Sil shouted, firing off a constant stream of lightning. Now the whole of the Moth's body was lighting up blue, and the blood was oozing from the beast's body.

The lightning continued to leave his arms, and Ko couldn't believe what he was seeing and eventually when the lightning had stopped. The beast was no longer moving in a pool of its own black blood.

It usually would have been a cause for celebration, and Robin was happy, but not Ko. He looked at his fallen comrades.

'If he could have done that from the beginning, then why? Why didn't he come in earlier instead of waiting for everyone to get hurt!' Ko thought angrily.

And there was one more person he was annoyed at as well, Quinn who had seemingly disappeared and ran away, just where the hell was he?

At that moment, in the forest, Quinn with his special armour, was standing there waiting to see the beast, as trees were being broken down one by one, and the sound of the beast's roars was getting closer.

"I have the new shadow skills I have learnt, the new blood skills, and even a new armour set. I would have liked to have used you to train even further and test these skills out, but I can't waste any time on you." Quinn said.

[Activating: The Blue fang Armour set]

[Skill activated: Nitro accelerate]

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– Nitro accelerate

With Quinn having left the north gate, it left Ko, Robin and Sil to deal with the Demi-god tier beast that had the appearance of a giant white furry Moth. The three of them needed to act fast, as they could see a number of their people who were fighting the beast collapsing onto the ground.

They weren't dead, as they could still be seen breathing, but they still wouldn't wake up despite what was going on around them. One had even been hit while asleep. It was an attack that was partially deflected off one of the Moth's large wings. Yet, still they didn't wake up.

"We can not allow that thing to get into the Shelter. If it does, it will cause everyone else to fall asleep, then the rest of the other beasts will cause even more mayhem!" Robin claimed.

"What are we meant to do? Whoever gets within ten meters seems to be hit by the beast's fur that's shedding from its body. It looks impossible to avoid and hard to see. All our ranged attacks seem useless as well." Ko explained.

The other Graylash members continued to fire lighting at the giant Moth, but it was seemingly doing nothing. As if it just tickled the beast. This was meant to be one of the strongest abilities out there.

Looking at the beast movements, Robin had noticed something. It hadn't taken flight even with the two giant wings. An aerial beast sometimes was more difficult, so why was it on the ground?

It looked like it was constantly moving, every time someone got close to a certain part of its body, protecting a certain place. At one point, one of the travellers had gotten close to its under part as it ran under its head, fighting the loss of energy. When this happened, it leapt back for the first time swinging its powerful wings forward. As soon as it was in the air, it spun so one could only see its back.

"It's the underbelly. I'm sure that is its weak point. With my soul weapon. I can create quite the powerful attack to damage it, but we will need someone to get close to it, and force it to show its belly" Robin explained.

Now the men that were continuing to fight the Moth were down to five. Pulling out his regular sword Ko had enough, and was about to jump off the wall, until he felt Sil grab his arm.

"What are you doing kid, get off me!" Ko shrugged it away. "If you're just going to stand here and be useless, be useless somewhere else!"

Ko then leapt off the wall, and stood in front of the gate, waiting for the right time to go in.

“Sil, is your name correct?” Robin said, turning to him. “Your power, if I fail, we might need to rely on you to finish the job. Owen told me a lot about you.” Saying this, he held out his hand allowing Sil to touch him, and soon after he had leapt off the building as well.

Spirals of blue lightning started to surround Robin’s arms, and legs as he activated his soul weapon, but this was only one part of it, he needed to activate the second part of it to truly use the move he wanted and he was relying on another for this part of the plan.

“Damn it, it looks like it was holding back on what it could do, but this is the only chance I’ll have!” Ko shouted as he lifted his sword back in the air above his head, tilting his back.

The other men were quickly falling asleep after being hit by the fur, so he had no choice but to use this opening. Activating his ability, his weapon grew in size. Becoming almost as big as the Moth itself.

It was strange how one could still wield a beast weapon with its sheer size but the weight of the weapon had remained the same for Ko the ability user, only the size had changed. Swinging it down with all his might, hitting the Moth with a weapon this large would do something, and the Moth seemed to think this as well as it leapt backwards in the air.

The attack from Ko was fast, but the Demi-god tier beast was faster avoiding the blow. However, this was the plan in the first place. Now it was showing its white belly. It looked as if it was ready to turn around like before. Still, before it could, a large human sized blue lightning went straight past Ko’s head and straight to the Moth, hitting it in the centre part of its belly just under its head.

An explosion of blue occurred with lightning strikes firing off into the air. More of the Moth’s fur had been chucked everywhere. It fell to the floor rolling on the ground.

While Robin’s arms and legs were glowing in blue colour and slowly fading.

He was huffing and panting as his soul weapon had taken a lot out of him, but what was worse, for him and Ko both of them had been hit by the explosion of fur, and they could feel their bodies getting tired by the second.

It was a strange force like a spell draining the energy from both of them, making them incredibly tired.

“What is this, I thought it might have been a sleeping effect, but that’s not it at all!” Robin realised.

“It’s what I thought, this Moth is draining the energy from everyone to heal itself and make itself stronger. This fur, there has to be a way to get rid of it!” Robin started to think. Making a quick decision he placed both of his hands on himself.

Usually, users of the lightning power coated themselves with lightning to avoid getting hurt. After all, their bodies were not made of lightning itself. This time he had done no such thing and shocked himself repeatedly, making the pieces of fur from the Moth fall off his body.

His drained energy hadn’t returned, but it had finally stopped leaving him. Seeing Ko’s eyes, starting to become drowsy, he quickly fired and shocked him as well. He screamed in pain, but the pieces of fur that covered his body had fallen.

“What do we do!” Ko shouted, leaning on his sword stuck in the ground. He hadn’t used a lot of energy, but a lot of it had been drained, and he was relying on Robin for an answer. “The Moth looks like it’s fine to me,” Ko said.

The truth was, using a soul weapon took a lot of energy, and it was the same for Robin. It was meant to be a trump card in a fight, but he had wanted to get rid of it quickly. In the past, Robin had always fought with others to help him along the way but now he saw no way of getting out of this one, until several lightning strikes seemed to hit the Moth, and unlike the others, with each one, it was creating a wound on the creature no matter where it hit.

Walking past Ko, Sil was seen with his hands out.

‘He has lightning powers? But he isn’t part of the Graylash family! Didn’t the Cursed bring him along?’ Ko thought.

“Where have you been?” Robin asked, smiling back at Sil.

“I had to get a few more abilities to make your powers stronger. It’s not the same as the world leaders, but it should be enough!” Sil shouted, firing off a constant stream of lightning. Now the whole of the Moth’s body was lighting up blue, and the blood was oozing from the beast’s body.

The lightning continued to leave his arms, and Ko couldn’t believe what he was seeing and eventually when the lightning had stopped. The beast was no longer moving in a pool of its own black blood.

It usually would have been a cause for celebration, and Robin was happy, but not Ko. He looked at his fallen comrades.

‘If he could have done that from the beginning, then why? Why didn’t he come in earlier instead of waiting for everyone to get hurt!’ Ko thought angrily.

And there was one more person he was annoyed at as well, Quinn who had seemingly disappeared and ran away, just where the hell was he?

At that moment, in the forest, Quinn with his special armour, was standing there waiting to see the beast, as trees were being broken down one by one, and the sound of the beast’s roars was getting closer.

“I have the new shadow skills I have learnt, the new blood skills, and even a new armour set. I would have liked to have used you to train even further and test these skills out, but I can’t waste any time on you.” Quinn said.

[Activating: The Blue fang Armour set]

[Skill activated: Nitro accelerate]

My Vampire System Chapter 1050

– The Blue Fang Armour

The legendary tier equipment that had been created by Alex and was a gift from Helen, all the pieces had been put on. All armour pieces were created using the same beast crystals from a legendary tier beast, called the Blue Arctic Wolf. Found on a plane covered in snow.

Usually, beast crystals could only be used to create one piece of equipment that, that type of crystal was suited to, but the Arctic Wolves crystals were unique. It could be turned into any part including different weapons. Unfortunately, what this meant was that the stats that came with it weren't so specialised, or so this is what people assumed.

The legendary equipment created with the Arctic Wolf crystals wasn't on par with other legendary tier items but was highly sought after due to its adaptability. Legendary tier beasts were, after all, hard to come by, so finding one that could be turned into anything was seen as a big advantage to have.

However, when creating the crystal, Alex was able to uncover something else. The reason why the Arctic wolf crystals could be turned into anything, and he didn't seem to be the first one either. He wondered why the Daisy faction had gathered so many of the same beast legendary tier crystals, without using them to turn into anything else.

Hoping to find something, Alex created two different sets of armour with the Arctic Wolf crystals and when he created his second one, he understood. The Arctic wolf equipment was meant to be used as a set. An armour set that would have a special active ability for one to use.

With the armour equipped, Quinn could feel the effects of each item as the power of the beast equipment entered his body, improving his overall stats. Even though the legendary tier items were said not to be on par with others, it was still a huge improvement from what he was wearing.

[Blue Arctic Wolf C.h.e.s.t piece: +20 to all stats]

[Defence: 40]

[Blue Arctic Wolf Shoulder pieces: +10 to all stats]

[Defence: 20]

[Blue Arctic Wolf leg pieces: + 30 stamina]

[Blue Arctic Wolf boots + 30 agility]

[Defence 20]

Although the defence that each of the items gave was less than the emperor tier he had received from Alex before, that didn't matter for how great the equipment had improved his stats.

[Strength: 70 (100)]

[Agility: 70 (130)]

[Stamina: 69 (129)]

[Charm: 60 (90)]

It was the first time Quinn's stats had reached such numbers.

'This is what can happen with a full set of legendary tier equipment? And I also have the mask as well.' Quinn thought, as he couldn't imagine how much stronger he would be with Demi-god tier or Demon tier equipment.

However, he saw the chaos back there, and he needed to deal with this beast fast. He would have no time for training sessions.

Equipping the red demon-like mask, Quinn was ready.

When the beast was finally in view, Quinn could see coming through the forest was another Moth like creature. It too was covered in fur, only this time it was purple in colour. The trees were the only thing slowing it down as it hit them away, but that's when Quinn noticed something strange.

He could see that when the creature would hit the plants with its fur, and it would rub off onto the plants, it would slowly start to weather away.

‘That fur, I have to try to keep it off me.’ Quinn said.

When the beast got closer, something seemed to come off from it, small particles of fur, even without intentionally spreading it. It was walking and constantly shedding its skin, creating the air around it to turn purple. Small fibres that were nearly invisible had already entered the air.

[Warning – the Demi-god tier beast is emitting a deadly poison]

[Your HP is decreasing]

[Estimated time till death: 5 minutes]

[Defeat the Demi-god tier beast in five minutes]

[Rewards ???]

‘As if I didn’t have a good enough reason already to try and defeat this thing quickly,’ Quinn thought.

Now he was sure what the right thing to do was. To activate the set armour ability.

[Activating: The Blue fang Armour set]

[Skill activated: Nitro accelerate]

All the energy that Quinn had felt from the boost in wearing the equipment was suddenly going into a different area. He could feel the energy moving around, as the set of silver armour started to light up, in a shining blue.

Looking at his stats, there was a drastic change that proved that the active skill had worked.

[Agility: 220]

For one, the active ability would only last a total of two minutes, the second was after the skill was activated, it would be on a one hour cooldown. During this cool-down period, all the stats the equipment usually gave was nullified. It was like he was just wearing pieces of scrap metal during the cool-down period.

This didn't matter so much for Quinn though, because with his shadow equip skill, during the cool-down period while mid fight he could change his armour. Something that wasn't an option for him. The disadvantage of using such a powerful skill has been negated like that.

Quinn's health was already deteriorating, but he wanted to kill the beast before even the time had run out. He charged forward, moving his legs, and everything around him started to look like a blur. Through focusing, he was finally able to see things, but it took a lot of mind power. The beast couldn't even keep track of where Quinn was, nor could he himself, as he had accidentally run straight past the beast, colliding into a tree, but breaking it in the process.

"Crap!" Quinn thought as he brushed a few branches of himself, and looked at the back of the beast. "I can't just use my body's full speed just yet, but I can still control it, so I'll just have to get used to it slowly."

Charging at the beast a little slower this time, Quinn had punched one of the beast's legs, using a blood spray filled fist. It had torn off part of the beast skin but hadn't created a wound. As expected one would think a Demi-god tier beast couldn't be taken down with one blow, but while he was like this. That didn't matter.

He punched at one of the many Moths' legs multiple times using his full strength, and the faster his hits were, the stronger they would be as well. When the Moth eventually turned around, Quinn had already ran underneath it going for the next one.

The Moth screamed in pain and anger. Its purple fur was being thrown about everywhere, even attaching itself to Quinn. His health was still deteriorating and he could see the timer on his quest going down.

'It's poison must be strong. I can see why it's a Demi-god tier beast. I bet if it was fighting against anyone else, it would have poisoned and killed them in seconds. But vampires seem to have a better resistance, and with my Blood bank I can continue on for a lot longer, regaining my energy!'

Quinn Slid underneath the Moth's belly, and jumped before hammering both elbows into one of the Moth's eyes. Three of the beast legs had already been destroyed, including one of its eyes now. The beast truly felt like it could do nothing.

Its poison wasn't working, and Quinn was strong enough to continue to use his speed and skills to his advantage. Getting behind to its next leg, Quinn then proceeded to produce his well learnt t.h.i.g.h kick.

The first kick didn't work as it slammed the beast, but it had a clear effect as its body wobbled. Not giving it time to recover, producing five in succession, the last kick had snapped the leg and sent it flying through the forest.

'This is great. I don't even have to use my blood abilities or shadow powers. This armour has just given me another way to fight!' Quinn thought excitedly.

However, his time was running out with the active skill, and his other set of equipment wasn't exactly the best at the moment. If he didn't finish off the beast in two minutes, then it would have been better for him to not use the skill at all.

Knowing this, Quinn could see the beast was mostly crippled. He leapt onto the beast's head and stood strong. It swung its large body in an attempt to swing what was on its head off. Quinn raised his hand, and blood started to gather around it, flowing down from his fingertips down to his elbow. Soon it started to spiral like a type of drill, covering a single arm.

It was one of the blood moves he had learnt from Eno himself. Mixing this in with his already known Hammer strike. Quinn was able to create a new move. He started the motions slamming into the beast

head. Using Qi that force alone was enough to jolt the beast, then pulling his arm and snapping it forward, the Blood hammer drill had been executed.

Slamming the drill into the beast head, a loud bang was heard and the blood drill was able to pierce through it easily. Creating a large hole in its head and even going through to the ground. A few seconds later and the beast had instantly stopped moving, and had fallen to the floor.

At that moment, the famous ding was heard in his head, and the blue armour on his body started to dim once again.

[Quest completed]

[You will receive the following rewards]

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

∴ .

– The Blue Fang Armour

The legendary tier equipment that had been created by Alex and was a gift from Helen, all the pieces had been put on. All armour pieces were created using the same beast crystals from a legendary tier beast, called the Blue Arctic Wolf. Found on a plane covered in snow.

Usually, beast crystals could only be used to create one piece of equipment that, that type of crystal was suited to, but the Arctic Wolves crystals were unique. It could be turned into any part including different weapons. Unfortunately, what this meant was that the stats that came with it weren't so specialised, or so this is what people assumed.

The legendary equipment created with the Arctic Wolf crystals wasn't on par with other legendary tier items but was highly sought after due to its adaptability. Legendary tier beasts were, after all, hard to come by, so finding one that could be turned into anything was seen as a big advantage to have.

However, when creating the crystal, Alex was able to uncover something else. The reason why the Arctic wolf crystals could be turned into anything, and he didn't seem to be the first one either. He wondered why the Daisy faction had gathered so many of the same beast legendary tier crystals, without using them to turn into anything else.

Hoping to find something, Alex created two different sets of armour with the Arctic Wolf crystals and when he created his second one, he understood. The Arctic wolf equipment was meant to be used as a set. An armour set that would have a special active ability for one to use.

With the armour equipped, Quinn could feel the effects of each item as the power of the beast equipment entered his body, improving his overall stats. Even though the legendary tier items were said not to be on par with others, it was still a huge improvement from what he was wearing.

[Blue Arctic Wolf C.h.e.s.t piece: +20 to all stats]

[Defence: 40]

[Blue Arctic Wolf Shoulder pieces: +10 to all stats]

[Defence: 20]

[Blue Arctic Wolf leg pieces: + 30 stamina]

[Blue Arctic Wolf boots + 30 agility]

[Defence 20]

Although the defence that each of the items gave was less than the emperor tier he had received from Alex before, that didn't matter for how great the equipment had improved his stats.

[Strength: 70 (100)]

[Agility: 70 (130)]

[Stamina: 69 (129)]

[Charm: 60 (90)]

It was the first time Quinn's stats had reached such numbers.

'This is what can happen with a full set of legendary tier equipment? And I also have the mask as well.' Quinn thought, as he couldn't imagine how much stronger he would be with Demi-god tier or Demon tier equipment.

However, he saw the chaos back there, and he needed to deal with this beast fast. He would have no time for training sessions.

Equipping the red demon-like mask, Quinn was ready.

When the beast was finally in view, Quinn could see coming through the forest was another Moth like creature. It too was covered in fur, only this time it was purple in colour. The trees were the only thing slowing it down as it hit them away, but that's when Quinn noticed something strange.

He could see that when the creature would hit the plants with its fur, and it would rub off onto the plants, it would slowly start to weather away.

'That fur, I have to try to keep it off me.' Quinn said.

When the beast got closer, something seemed to come off from it, small particles of fur, even without intentionally spreading it. It was walking and constantly shedding its skin, creating the air around it to turn purple. Small fibres that were nearly invisible had already entered the air.

[Warning – the Demi-god tier beast is emitting a deadly poison]

[Your HP is decreasing]

[Estimated time till death: 5 minutes]

[Defeat the Demi-god tier beast in five minutes]

[Rewards ???]

“As if I didn’t have a good enough reason already to try and defeat this thing quickly,” Quinn thought.

Now he was sure what the right thing to do was. To activate the set armour ability.

[Activating: The Blue fang Armour set]

[Skill activated: Nitro accelerate]

All the energy that Quinn had felt from the boost in wearing the equipment was suddenly going into a different area. He could feel the energy moving around, as the set of silver armour started to light up, in a shining blue.

Looking at his stats, there was a drastic change that proved that the active skill had worked.

[Agility: 220]

For one, the active ability would only last a total of two minutes, the second was after the skill was activated, it would be on a one hour cooldown. During this cool-down period, all the stats the equipment usually gave was nullified. It was like he was just wearing pieces of scrap metal during the cool-down period.

This didn't matter so much for Quinn though, because with his shadow equip skill, during the cool-down period while mid fight he could change his armour. Something that wasn't an option for him. The disadvantage of using such a powerful skill has been negated like that.

Quinn's health was already deteriorating, but he wanted to kill the beast before even the time had run out. He charged forward, moving his legs, and everything around him started to look like a blur. Through focusing, he was finally able to see things, but it took a lot of mind power. The beast couldn't even keep track of where Quinn was, nor could he himself, as he had accidentally run straight past the beast, colliding into a tree, but breaking it in the process.

"Crap!" Quinn thought as he brushed a few branches of himself, and looked at the back of the beast. "I can't just use my body's full speed just yet, but I can still control it, so I'll just have to get used to it slowly."

Charging at the beast a little slower this time, Quinn had punched one of the beast's legs, using a blood spray filled fist. It had torn off part of the beast skin but hadn't created a wound. As expected one would think a Demi-god tier beast couldn't be taken down with one blow, but while he was like this. That didn't matter.

He punched at one of the many Moths' legs multiple times using his full strength, and the faster his hits were, the stronger they would be as well. When the Moth eventually turned around, Quinn had already ran underneath it going for the next one.

The Moth screamed in pain and anger. Its purple fur was being thrown about everywhere, even attaching itself to Quinn. His health was still deteriorating and he could see the timer on his quest going down.

'It's poison must be strong. I can see why it's a Demi-god tier beast. I bet if it was fighting against anyone else, it would have poisoned and killed them in seconds. But vampires seem to have a better resistance, and with my Blood bank I can continue on for a lot longer, regaining my energy!'

Quinn slid underneath the Moth's belly, and jumped before hammering both elbows into one of the Moth's eyes. Three of the beast's legs had already been destroyed, including one of its eyes now. The beast truly felt like it could do nothing.

Its poison wasn't working, and Quinn was strong enough to continue to use his speed and skills to his advantage. Getting behind to its next leg, Quinn then proceeded to produce his well-learned t.h.i.g.h kick.

The first kick didn't work as it slammed the beast, but it had a clear effect as its body wobbled. Not giving it time to recover, producing five in succession, the last kick had snapped the leg and sent it flying through the forest.

'This is great. I don't even have to use my blood abilities or shadow powers. This armour has just given me another way to fight!' Quinn thought excitedly.

However, his time was running out with the active skill, and his other set of equipment wasn't exactly the best at the moment. If he didn't finish off the beast in two minutes, then it would have been better for him to not use the skill at all.

Knowing this, Quinn could see the beast was mostly crippled. He leapt onto the beast's head and stood strong. It swung its large body in an attempt to swing what was on its head off. Quinn raised his hand, and blood started to gather around it, flowing down from his fingertips down to his elbow. Soon it started to spiral like a type of drill, covering a single arm.

It was one of the blood moves he had learnt from Eno himself. Mixing this in with his already known Hammer strike. Quinn was able to create a new move. He started the motions slamming into the beast's head. Using Qi that force alone was enough to jolt the beast, then pulling his arm and snapping it forward, the Blood hammer drill had been executed.

Slamming the drill into the beast's head, a loud bang was heard and the blood drill was able to pierce through it easily. Creating a large hole in its head and even going through to the ground. A few seconds later and the beast had instantly stopped moving, and had fallen to the floor.

At that moment, the famous ding was heard in his head, and the blue armour on his body started to dim once again.

[Quest completed]

[You will receive the following rewards]

